

Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository

9-23-2019 1:30 PM

Carbon and Nitrogen Dynamics in Plants Grown at Low CO₂ Conditions of the Past

Andre Galvao Duarte, *The University of Western Ontario*

Supervisor: Way, Danielle A., *The University of Western Ontario*

Co-Supervisor: Longstaffe, Fred J., *The University of Western Ontario*

A thesis submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the Doctor of Philosophy degree in Biology

© Andre Galvao Duarte 2019

Follow this and additional works at: <https://ir.lib.uwo.ca/etd>



Part of the [Botany Commons](#), and the [Plant Biology Commons](#)

Recommended Citation

Galvao Duarte, Andre, "Carbon and Nitrogen Dynamics in Plants Grown at Low CO₂ Conditions of the Past" (2019). *Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository*. 6600.
<https://ir.lib.uwo.ca/etd/6600>

This Dissertation/Thesis is brought to you for free and open access by Scholarship@Western. It has been accepted for inclusion in Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository by an authorized administrator of Scholarship@Western. For more information, please contact wlsadmin@uwo.ca.

Abstract

For most of the recent evolutionary history of plants, atmospheric CO₂ concentrations have been far below modern values. However, little is known about how plants grown in a low CO₂ environment balance their carbon demand for growth while meeting their requirement for nitrogen acquisition, the establishment of mycorrhizal fungal associations, and the production of defense compounds. Here, I investigated how low CO₂ affects *Elymus canadensis* and *Picea mariana* by comparing their growth at low and current CO₂ concentrations. I found that reduced N availability exacerbated low CO₂ effects on growth, and reduced stomatal index and N isotope composition, indicating that the use of these variables as paleo-indicators can be influenced by N availability. Mycorrhizal association was enhanced in low-CO₂ plants, and increased root N but decreased root $\delta^{15}\text{N}$, which could skew the interpretation of $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ when comparing non- and mycorrhizal ancient plant samples. Growth at low CO₂ decreased the formation and size of resin ducts and terpene production, suggesting that plants growing at past CO₂ conditions had reduced capacity to chemically defend against herbivory.

Keywords

Plant physiology, photosynthesis, plant growth, sub-ambient CO₂, nitrogen isotopes, carbon isotopes, mycorrhizae, resin duct, terpene.

Summary for Lay Audience

Carbon dioxide (CO₂) is an atmospheric gas essential to plant life as plants use CO₂ in photosynthesis to produce the energy necessary for growth. In the past, atmospheric CO₂ concentrations were far below the levels observed today, which limited plant growth. By studying plants grown at the low CO₂ concentrations of the past we can learn about how plants thrived in an environment where carbon resources were limiting, and recreate ancient dynamics between plants and their environment. In my thesis, I compared the performance of Canada wild rye (*Elymus canadensis*) and black spruce (*Picea mariana*) grown at modern CO₂ concentrations and CO₂ conditions that occurred 20,000 years ago, when CO₂ concentrations were less than half the levels observed today. I investigated how plants growing under such past conditions were affected by the availability of nitrogen, a soil nutrient essential for plants. I also compared the association between plants and fungi when grown at low and ambient CO₂ conditions. Lastly, I examined whether plants growing at low CO₂ conditions would be able to form compounds that are used as defense against herbivory. I found that nitrogen availability and association with fungi alter certain plant traits that are used in the study of ancient plant samples, and thus the present use of these traits may require reconsideration. I also found that plants growing at the low CO₂ conditions of the past associated more closely with fungi, which helped increase plant access of nitrogen. Finally, I observed that low CO₂-grown plants not only had reduced growth but also had a decreased ability to form defensive compounds called terpenes. In other words, plants in the past had a lower capacity to defend against parasites and herbivores compared to modern plants.

Co-Authorship Statement

All data chapters are co-authored with my supervisors Professors Danielle A. Way and Fred J. Longstaffe, who provided funding for all projects, contributed to study design, and helped edit all chapters. A version of Chapter 2 is under revision in the journal *Functional Plant Biology*.

Acknowledgments

I would like to express my profound gratitude to my supervisors Professors. Danielle A. Way and Fred J. Longstaffe for their mentorship and support. I also would like to thank my advisors Professors. Hugh Henry and Brent Sinclair for their guidance. I am also grateful for the support and companionship I received throughout the years from the Way lab's and LSIS' members. I also would like to acknowledge the financial support from the Natural Sciences and Engineering Research Council of Canada and from the Conselho Nacional de Desenvolvimento Científico e Tecnológico through the program Sciences without Borders.

Table of Contents

Abstract.....	i
Summary for Lay Audience.....	ii
Co-Authorship Statement.....	iii
Acknowledgments	iv
Table of Contents	v
List of Tables.....	ix
List of Figures	xi
List of Appendices.....	xvii
List of Abbreviations	xviii
Chapter 1	1
1 General Introduction	1
1.1 Carbon and nitrogen dynamics in plants.....	4
1.1.1 Low CO ₂ effects on carbon fluxes	5
1.1.2 Nitrogen assimilation in plants.....	13
1.1.3 Stable Carbon and Nitrogen isotope compositions in plants	15
1.2 Plant-mycorrhizal interactions.....	18
1.3 Effects of growth CO ₂ on defense compound production.....	21
1.4 A caveat in low-CO ₂ studies: The possibility of plant adaptation since low-CO ₂ periods	23
1.5 Research questions and hypothesis.....	24
References	25
Chapter 2	39
2 Nitrogen fertilization influences low CO₂ effects on plant performance	39
2.1 Abstract	39

2.2	Introduction	39
2.3	Materials and methods	44
2.3.1	Experimental design and treatments.....	44
2.3.2	Gas exchange measurements	45
2.3.3	Biomass.....	45
2.3.4	Stomatal index.....	46
2.3.5	Isotopes, C and N concentration	46
2.3.6	Statistical analysis	47
2.4	Results	47
2.4.1	Biomass, SLA, [C] and [N].....	47
2.4.2	Photosynthetic parameters	52
2.4.3	Stomatal conductance and index	52
2.5	Discussion.....	57
2.5.1	Decrease in growth at low CO ₂	57
2.5.2	Reductions in photosynthetic performance at low CO ₂ depend on N availability.....	58
2.5.3	SI _{adaxial} decreased at low CO ₂ when N was limiting.....	60
2.5.4	C and N availability regulates N isotopic discrimination	60
2.5.5	NO ₃ ⁻ vs NH ₄ ⁺ as N sources at low CO ₂	62
2.6	References	62
Chapter 3	69
3	Plant-mycorrhizal interactions differ between past low CO₂ conditions and current CO₂ concentrations.....	69
3.1	Abstract	69
3.2	Introduction	70
3.3	Methods.....	73

3.3.1	Experimental design and treatments.....	73
3.3.2	Biomass.....	74
3.3.3	Fungal colonization	74
3.3.4	Isotopes, C and N concentration	75
3.3.5	Gas exchange measurements	76
3.3.6	Statistical analysis	77
3.4	Results	77
3.5	Discussion.....	85
3.5.1	GC plants associated with mycorrhizae benefited from higher [N].....	85
3.5.2	AC plants showed little benefit from mycorrhizae	86
3.5.3	Mycorrhizal association shifts C and N isotope compositions at low CO ₂	87
3.6	References	90
Chapter 4		99
4	Low growth CO₂ concentrations of the past decrease plant chemical defense production	99
4.1	Abstract	99
4.2	Introduction	99
4.3	Methods	102
4.3.1	Experimental design and plant material	102
4.3.2	Gas exchange measurements	103
4.3.3	Biomass.....	103
4.3.4	Resin duct microscopy.....	104
4.3.5	Monoterpene and diterpene analysis	104
4.3.6	Statistical analysis	105
4.4	Results	106

4.4.1	Biomass.....	106
4.4.2	Gas-exchange parameters	109
4.4.3	Resin duct anatomy	112
4.4.4	Mono and diterpenes	112
4.5	Discussion.....	116
4.5.1	Plant growth and carbon fluxes.....	116
4.5.2	Resin duct and terpene production	117
4.6	References	120
Chapter 5	128
5	General discussion	128
5.1	Plant growth and N acquisition at low CO ₂	129
5.2	Decreases in photosynthetic rates at low CO ₂	132
5.3	Mycorrhizae and N availability influence C and N isotope compositions at low CO ₂	133
5.4	Paleoecology implications of mycorrhizal associations and reduced chemical defense.....	135
5.5	Future work	136
5.6	References	138
	Appendices.....	144
6	CV	150

List of Tables

Table 2.1. Analysis of variance testing growth CO₂, fertilizer treatment, and their interaction on plant traits. Specific leaf area (SLA); carbon concentration ([C]); nitrogen concentration ([N]); net CO₂ assimilation rates at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and a common CO₂ of 400 ppm (A_{400}); maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates (V_{cmax}); maximum electron transport rates (J_{max}); stomatal conductance at growth CO₂ ($g_{\text{s-growth}}$) and a common CO₂ of 400 ppm ($g_{\text{s-400}}$); abaxial (SI_{abaxial}) and adaxial (SI_{adaxial}) stomatal index; and the difference between the isotope composition of leaves ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) or roots ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$) between ambient and low CO₂ plants. The p -values are shown with significant effects in bold ($p \leq 0.05$).....49

Table 2.2. Carbon ([C]) and nitrogen ([N]) concentration in leaves and roots of plants grown at ambient (AC) and low CO₂ (LC) for each of the four nitrogen treatments: full-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Full*); full-strength, NO₃⁻-only fertilizer (*Nitrate*); full-strength NH₄⁺-only fertilizer (*Ammonium*); and half-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Half*). Upper-case letters (shown only on AC) represent the fertilizer treatment effects ($p \leq 0.05$), as there is no significant interaction term. Means \pm SE, n=5.51

Table 2.3. Difference in nitrogen isotope composition of leaves and roots between plants grown at ambient and low CO₂ for each nitrogen treatment: full-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Full*); full-strength, NO₃⁻-only fertilizer (*Nitrate*); full-strength NH₄⁺-only fertilizer (*Ammonium*); and half-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Half*). $\Delta^{15}\text{N}$ is calculated as the difference in nitrogen isotope composition between ambient and low CO₂-grown plants ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}} - \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$) for leaves ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$). Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, n = 5.56

Table 3.1. Analysis of variance results testing growth CO₂, mycorrhizal inoculation, and their interaction term on plant traits. Carbon isotope signature of leaves ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$), and carbon concentration in leaves and roots ([C]_{leaf}, [C]_{root},

respectively); nitrogen isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$) and nitrogen concentration in leaves and roots ($[\text{N}]_{\text{leaf}}$, $[\text{N}]_{\text{root}}$, respectively); net CO_2 assimilation rates at growth CO_2 (A_{growth}); dark respiration measured at 400 ppm CO_2 (R_{dark}). The p -values are shown with significant effects highlighted in bold ($p \leq 0.05$). ..79

List of Figures

- Figure 1.1. Atmospheric CO₂ concentrations over the last million years.** Data since 1960 have been directly measured by The Earth System Research Laboratory in The National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration's Office (NOAA); prior to that, CO₂ concentrations are derived from a range of paleo-indicators (pink, foraminifera; blue, ice cores; green, stomata). Specific timepoints are marked by diamonds: yellow, Last Glacial Maximum; orange, Industrial Revolution; red, present time. Data extracted from Beerling and Chaloner (1994); Lüthi *et al.* (2008); Monnin *et al.* (2001); NOAA/ESRL; Petit *et al.* (1999).....3
- Figure 1.2. Simplified schematic of photosynthesis.** Rubisco, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase; PSII, photosystem II; P680, photosystem II primary donor; PSI, photosystem I; P700, photosystem I primary donor; NADPH, nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate; ATP, adenosine triphosphate; 3-PGA, 3-phosphoglycerate; G3P, glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate; RuBP, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate. Figure modified from Taiz and Zeiger (2010).8
- Figure 1.3. Photosynthetic CO₂ response curve based on the Farquhar, Berry and von Caemmerer (1980) biochemical model of photosynthesis.** The measurement of net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}) across a range of intercellular CO₂ concentrations (C_i) is used to derive the biochemical limitation of A_{net} from the maximum carboxylation rates of Rubisco (V_{cmax} , A_c , red line), and the maximum electron transport rates (J_{max} , A_j , blue line). The limiting rate (black line) is determined as the minimum A_{net} from the two biochemical limitations, which fits the measured observations. Data from *Elymus canadensis*, as described in Chapter 2.9
- Figure 1.4. Photorespiratory pathway.** Rubisco, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase; PG, phosphoglycolate; G3P, glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate; RuBP, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate; NADPH, nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate; ATP, adenosine triphosphate. Figure modified from Taiz and Zeiger (2010).....11

Figure 1.5. Simplified schematic of enzymes and substrates involved in inorganic N conversion that are derived from the photosynthetic and photorespiratory pathways. Nitrate (NO_3^-) is converted to nitrite (NO_2^-) by nitrate reductase (*NR*) using nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide (*NADH*). Nitrite reductase (*NiR*), using reduced ferredoxin (Fd_{red}) as an electron donor, reduces NO_2^- to ammonium (NH_4^+). NH_4^+ is then converted to glutamine by glutamine synthase (*GS*), while glutamine 2-oxoglutarate aminotransferase (*GOGAT*) converts glutamine and 2-oxoglutarate into glutamate. *NADH*, Fd_{red} , and 2-oxoglutarate are produced during the tricarboxylic acid (TCA) cycle, which is fueled by sugar phosphates produced during photosynthetic CO_2 assimilation by Ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase (Rubisco). Malate derived from photorespiration (O_2 fixation by Rubisco) generates *NADH* and can also be used during the reduction of NO_3^- to NO_2^- in the cytoplasm. Figure derived from Andrews *et al.* (2013), Dutilleul *et al.* (2005), Krapp (2015), Nunes-Nesi *et al.* (2010), and Xu *et al.* (2012).....12

Figure 1.6. Root colonization by an arbuscular mycorrhizal fungus. Cartoon illustration of an arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi inside root cells showing the arbuscules (tree-like structures) connected to hyphae (purple lines). To the right, light microscopy showing arbuscules of *Glomus intraradices* indicated by the arrow.20

Figure 2.1 *Elymus canadensis* plants used in this experiment......43

Figure 2.2. Plant biomass and specific leaf area (SLA). Shoot, root, and total dry biomass, root/shoot, and SLA of plants grown at ambient (left panels) and low CO_2 (right panels) in each fertilization treatment (*Full*, *Nitrate*, *Ammonium* and *Half*). Where the interaction term is significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO_2 data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, $n=5$50

Figure 2.3. Net CO_2 assimilation (A_{net}), maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) rates. A_{net} measured at growth CO_2 (A_{growth}) and a common CO_2 concentration of 400 ppm (A_{400}) of plants grown at ambient (left panels) and low CO_2

(right panels) in each fertilization treatment (*Full*, *Nitrate*, *Ammonium* and *Half*). Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO₂ data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, n=5.....53

Figure 2.4. Stomatal conductance measured at growth CO₂ ($g_{s\text{-growth}}$) and a common CO₂ concentration of 400 ppm ($g_{s\text{-400}}$), and stomatal index measured on the abaxial (SI_{abaxial}) and adaxial (SI_{adaxial}) sides of the leaves. Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO₂ data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, n=5.....54

Figure 3.1. Leaf, root, and total biomass, and relative growth rate. Upper-case letters (shown only for the control data) represent differences between growth CO₂ when there is no significant interaction term; levels of significance for CO₂ and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; n = 12.80

Figure 3.2. Variations in carbon isotope composition and concentration. Carbon isotope signature of leaves ($\delta^{13}C_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}C_{\text{root}}$), and leaf and root C concentration ($[C]_{\text{leaf}}$ and $[C]_{\text{root}}$) Levels of significance for CO₂ and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Where the interaction term was significant, differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only for the control data) represent differences between growth CO₂ concentrations when there is no significant interaction term. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; n = 12.....81

Figure 3.3. Nitrogen isotope composition and nitrogen concentration. N isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$), and leaf and root N concentrations ($[\text{N}]_{\text{leaf}}$ and $[\text{N}]_{\text{root}}$). Levels of significance for CO_2 and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Where the interaction term was significant, differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on the control data) represent differences between growth CO_2 concentrations when there is no significant interaction term. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 12$83

Figure 3.4. Net CO_2 assimilation (A) and dark respiration (R_{dark}) rates. A measured at growth CO_2 (A_{growth}) and dark respiration measured at 400 ppm (R_{dark}). Levels of significance for CO_2 and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters considering a significant interaction term for $p \leq 0.05$. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n=12$84

Figure 4.1 *Picea mariana* plants harvested at the end of the experiment. On the left side, a plant grown at ambient CO_2 conditions, and on the right, a low- CO_2 grown plant. 107

Figure 4.2. Plant biomass, Specific Leaf Area (SLA), and total leaf area: Shoot, root, and total biomass, shoot/root ratio, SLA, and total needle area of plants grown at ambient and low CO_2 . The p -values indicate growth CO_2 effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$ 108

Figure 4.3. Net CO₂ assimilation rates (A) and stomatal conductance (g_s) measured at growth CO₂ (A_{growth} and $g_{s\text{-growth}}$) and at a common CO₂ concentration of 400 ppm (A_{400} and g_{s-400}). The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$ 110

Figure 4.4. Maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) rates, the ratio between V_{cmax} and J_{max} , dark respiration (R_d), and the ratio between A_{growth} and R_d . The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$ 111

Figure 4.5. Needle cross-sections. Sections on the left side were obtained from needles of ambient CO₂-grown plants where both resin ducts are present. On the right side, needle cross-sections from low CO₂-grown plants display examples of where both resin ducts are present (upper), only one duct can be seen (middle), or a needle lacking both ducts (lower). Fluorescence microscopy at 100 μm 113

Figure 4.6. Resin duct lumen area and the ratio of resin duct area per total leaf area. The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$ 114

Figure 4.7. Relative abundance of mono and diterpenes measured to an internal standard. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the

maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; n = 10-12. 115

Figure 5.1. Low CO₂ effects and their interaction with mycorrhizal association and N availability on plant traits. The color of the arrows indicates whether the value of the measured parameter increased (blue), decreased (red), or was unaffected (black). 130

List of Appendices

- Appendix A. Modified Hoagland's recipe for each fertilization regime.** **A.** full-strength $\text{NO}_3^-/\text{NH}_4^+$ mix fertilizer (*full*); **B.** full-strength, NO_3^- -only fertilizer (*nitrate*); **C.** a full-strength NH_4^+ -only fertilizer (*ammonium*); **D.** half-strength $\text{NO}_3^-/\text{NH}_4^+$ mix fertilizer (*half*). The concentration of the stock solution of each compound (mol), based on its molecular weight (g/mol), was calculated for one liter of water (g/L) and adjusted in order to achieve the desired concentration of each element (mol/L). 144
- Appendix B. Carbon isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$) in each inoculation and growth CO_2 treatment, adjusted to a common value (-8.4%) for atmospheric CO_2 in the growth chambers. Means \pm SE, n = 12. 149**

List of Abbreviations

3-PGA = 3-phosphoglycerate

A_{400} = net CO₂ assimilation rates measured at 400 ppm CO₂

A_{growth} = net CO₂ assimilation rates measured at growth CO₂

A_{net} = net CO₂ assimilation rates

ATP = adenosine triphosphate

[C] = carbon concentration

C_i = intercellular CO₂ concentration

CO₂ = carbon dioxide

G3P = glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate

g_s = stomatal conductance

g_{s-400} = stomatal conductance measured at 400 ppm CO₂

$g_{s-\text{growth}}$ = stomatal conductance measured at growth CO₂

J_{max} = maximum electron transport rates

LGM = Last Glacial Maximum

N = nitrogen

[N] = nitrogen concentration

NADPH = nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate

NH₄⁺ = ammonium

NO₃⁻ = nitrate

O₂ = molecular oxygen

P680 = photosystem II primary donor

P700 = photosystem I primary donor

PG = phosphoglycolate

PSI = photosystem I

PSII = photosystem II

R_{dark} = dark respiration measured at 400 ppm CO₂

RuBP = ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate.

Rubisco = ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase

SI_{abaxial} = abaxial stomatal index

SI_{adaxial} = adaxial stomatal index

SLA = specific leaf area

V_{cmax} = maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates

δ¹³C = stable carbon isotope composition

δ¹³C_{chamber} = stable carbon isotope composition of air CO₂ inside the growth chamber

δ¹³C_{leaf} = stable carbon isotope composition of leaves

δ¹³C_{root} = stable carbon isotope composition of roots

δ¹⁵N = stable nitrogen isotope composition

δ¹⁵N_{AC} = stable nitrogen isotope composition of plants grown at ambient CO₂

δ¹⁵N_{LC} = stable nitrogen isotope composition of plants grown at low CO₂

$\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$ = stable nitrogen isotope composition of leaves

$\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$ = stable nitrogen isotope composition of roots

$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$ = the difference in the stable nitrogen isotope composition of leaves between ambient CO_2 - and low CO_2 -grown plants ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}} - \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$)

$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$ = the difference in the stable nitrogen isotope composition of roots between ambient CO_2 - and low CO_2 -grown plants ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}} - \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$)

Chapter 1

1 General Introduction

Carbon dioxide (CO₂) is the substrate required for photosynthetic production of carbohydrates, the basic form of energy used by all living organisms (Farquhar and Sharkey, 2003; Stick, 2001). As a major limitation for photosynthesis and plant growth, changes in CO₂ availability, can have significant effects on plant productivity and evolution (Bazzaz and Bazzaz, 1996; Cowling and Sykes, 1999). For instance, the C₄ photosynthetic pathway, which concentrates CO₂ at the site of carboxylation, may have evolved as a mechanism to enhance photosynthetic rates during low CO₂ periods (Sage, 2004). In recent decades, CO₂ emissions have been accelerating at a global scale due to fossil-fuel burning and land use change (Andres *et al.*, 2012; Hofmann *et al.*, 2006; Keeling, 1973; Raupach *et al.*, 2007). However, as shown in Figure 1.1, CO₂ concentrations have been below 270 ppm for the millennia before the Industrial Revolution; concentrations were as low as 180 ppm by the end of the Last Glacial Maximum, about 20,000 years ago (Augustin *et al.*, 2004; Petit *et al.*, 1999).

Despite the prevalence of low CO₂ conditions over the recent evolutionary history of plants, studies investigating plant responses to low atmospheric CO₂ concentrations are fewer than those examining the effects of future higher CO₂ levels. Nevertheless, the literature provides several instances where modern plants exposed to low CO₂ concentrations of the past had their fitness significantly altered when compared to those grown at ambient CO₂ concentrations. For instance, growth at low CO₂ decreases photosynthetic rates and, consequently, biomass production (Agüera *et al.*, 2006; Cowling and Sage, 1998; Polley *et al.*, 1993; Sage, 1995; Sage and Cowling, 1999; Temme *et al.*, 2013), increases time to flowering, and hinders reproduction (Tissue *et al.*, 1995; Ward *et al.*, 2000; Ward and Strain, 1997). Low CO₂ may have even influenced the timing of when agriculture became feasible, as biomass production was too low to support the level of productivity required for the successful establishment of agriculture

(Sage, 1995). Therefore, a strong foundational knowledge of plant responses to the low CO₂ concentrations of the past is needed to enhance our understanding of plant evolutionary patterns and net primary productivity over geologic time scales (Gerhart and Ward, 2010).

While previous studies have established that growth at low CO₂ conditions limits plant development, advancing low CO₂ studies into a more ecologically relevant context requires the consideration of other biotic and abiotic environmental factors influencing plant growth. For instance, nitrogen (N) is considered one of the most growth-limiting nutrient in many ecosystems, both currently and in the past (Canfield *et al.*, 2010; Falkowski, 1997). However, no studies so far have investigated how plants grown in low CO₂ environments meet their N requirements, despite the high variability of forms and quantity of nitrogen that are naturally available to plants (Stevenson *et al.*, 1999; Wardle, 1992). Similarly, the interaction between plants and mycorrhizal fungi has been an important phenomenon across geological time scales (Cairney, 2000; Smith and Read, 2008). While much is uncertain about how this symbiosis will respond to future high CO₂ levels (Mohan *et al.*, 2014), even less is known about how the exchange of nutrients between plants and fungi functioned in past low CO₂ environments. In addition, considering that growth at low CO₂ concentrations limits primary metabolic functions that sustain growth, it is unlikely that plants growing under such conditions could allocate considerable resources to secondary metabolites, such as defense compounds, in a manner similar to modern plants (War *et al.*, 2012). This assumption, however, has never been tested.

Such explorations are not only important to expand our understanding of plant responses to temporal changes in CO₂ levels, but can also offer new insights to paleo-inferences based on fossil plant samples dating from low CO₂ periods, including anatomical features used for plant fossil identification and the isotope composition of plant tissues.

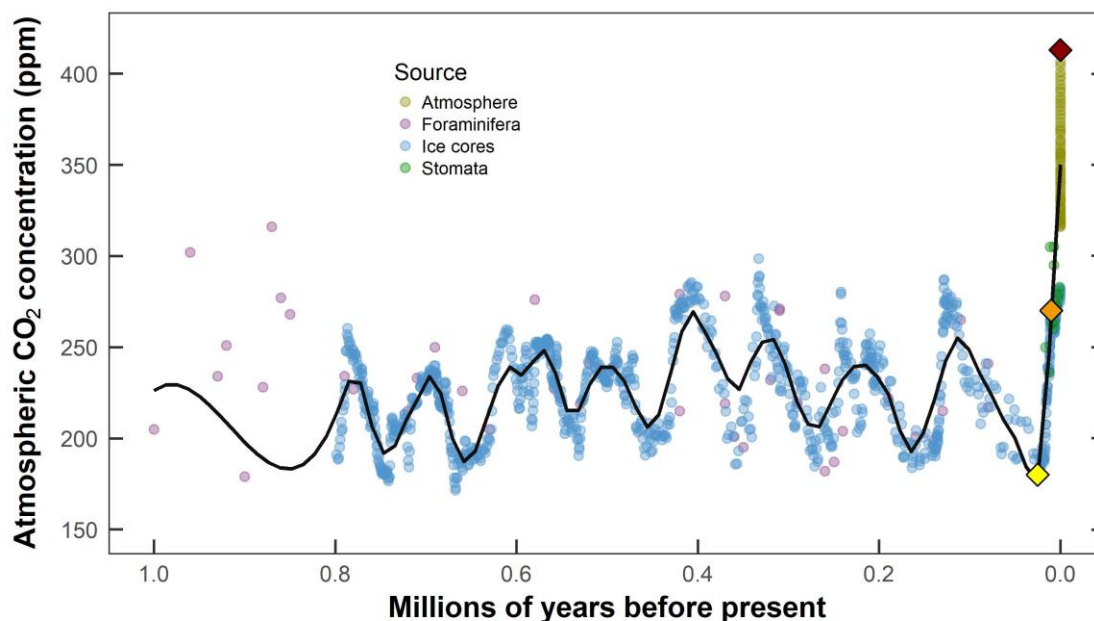


Figure 1.1. Atmospheric CO₂ concentrations over the last million years. Data since 1960 have been directly measured by The Earth System Research Laboratory in The National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration's Office (NOAA); prior to that, CO₂ concentrations are derived from a range of paleo-indicators (pink, foraminifera; blue, ice cores; green, stomata). Specific timepoints are marked by diamonds: yellow, Last Glacial Maximum; orange, Industrial Revolution; red, present time. Data extracted from Beerling and Chaloner (1994); Lüthi *et al.* (2008); Monnin *et al.* (2001); NOAA/ESRL; Petit *et al.* (1999).

This thesis contains the projects I developed to answer the gaps in the literature outlined above. Chapter 2 describes the effects that different N sources have on plant growth, photosynthesis, and N isotope composition in *Elymus canadensis* grown at low CO₂ concentrations. In Chapter 3, the association between *E. canadensis* and the mycorrhizal fungus *Glomus intraradices* at low CO₂ conditions is investigated, including growth parameters, fungal colonization, and carbon (C) and N isotope compositions. Chapter 4 describes how *Picea mariana* seedlings grown at ambient and sub-ambient CO₂ concentrations differ in their ability to allocate resources to defense components, such as resin ducts and terpenes. The choice of species for each experiment is discussed within the context of each chapter. Below, the effects of growth at low CO₂ concentrations on plant C and N dynamics and C and N isotope composition of plant tissues are reviewed. The functioning of the plant-mycorrhizal symbiosis, and possible low CO₂ effects on this association, are then discussed, followed by a summary of our current understanding of the effects of changing growth CO₂ concentrations on the production of plant defense compounds.

1.1 Carbon and nitrogen dynamics in plants

Nitrogen and carbon metabolism in plants are intrinsically related since C-skeletons and reductants necessary for N assimilation originate from the major C fluxes (*i.e.*, photosynthesis, photorespiration, and respiration), while N is an essential constituent of metabolic functions responsible for building the photosynthetic apparatus and sustaining growth (Nunes-Nesi *et al.*, 2010; Tegeder and Masclaux-Daubresse, 2017). Thus, by modulating rates of C exchange, growth CO₂ concentrations also determine the ability of plants to assimilate N.

1.1.1 Low CO₂ effects on carbon fluxes

Growth CO₂ concentrations have direct impacts on C cycling in plants by influencing the rates of the major leaf C fluxes: photosynthesis, photorespiration, and respiration. CO₂ is the substrate for photosynthesis, which is the incorporation of C from CO₂ by the enzyme ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase (Rubisco) into plant tissues using light energy (Farquhar and von Caemmerer, 1982). CO₂ availability, and consequently the ratio of CO₂/O₂, also regulates photorespiration, which is a biochemical process in plants where Rubisco, due to its dual function as both a carboxylase and an oxygenase, fixes molecular oxygen (O₂) and releases previously fixed CO₂ (Peterhansel and Maurino, 2011). In turn, the availability of photosynthetically produced carbohydrates is the energy source for respiration. Respiration is the energy-conserving process that generates the adenosine triphosphate (ATP) needed for cell maintenance and growth, and is common to all living organisms (Millar *et al.*, 2011). These three processes are discussed in more detail below.

1.1.1.1 Photosynthesis

As shown in Figure 1.2, photosynthesis begins with the absorption of a photon that excites a specialized chlorophyll, P680, leading to the ejection of an electron from P680 (Taiz and Zeiger, 2010). This electron is transported through the photosynthetic electron transport chain to the final electron acceptor (NADP⁺) via a series of redox reactions that include the absorption of a second photon by the antenna system of photosystem I, producing the reductant NADPH. Along the way, a proton gradient is created across the thylakoid membrane and this gradient generates ATP via an ATP synthase. Much of the energy and reducing power created in photosynthetic electron transport is used in the chloroplast stroma in the Calvin-Benson cycle. In this cycle, CO₂ is fixed to ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate (RuBP) by the enzyme Rubisco, producing 3-phosphoglycerate (PGA). This PGA is converted to 1,3-bisphosphoglycerate (which requires ATP), and then reduced to glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate (G3P), a reaction that consumes NADPH. Some

of the G3P is used to regenerate RuBP (a process that also uses ATP), while the rest is used to make glucose and other sugars.

Photosynthesis measurements are usually reported as net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}), which consists of total CO₂ assimilation from photosynthesis minus rates of CO₂ lost from photorespiration and that of respired CO₂ (Rabinowitch, 1951). In the Farquhar, von Caemmerer, and Berry (1980) biochemical model of photosynthesis, A_{net} is limited by either Rubisco limitations, RuBP-regeneration limitations, or triose phosphate utilization (TPU) limitations (Figure 1.3). Depending on the leaf internal CO₂ concentration and temperature, different biochemical limitations will limit A_{net} (Busch and Sage, 2017; Farquhar *et al.*, 1980; Sage and Kubien, 2007). At low CO₂ concentrations, Rubisco limitations prevail because there is insufficient CO₂ to saturate Rubisco carboxylation rates, but Rubisco oxygenation rates are high (*i.e.*, photorespiration), assuming that the supply of RuBP is saturating. Thus, photosynthesis is limited by the maximum carboxylation rate of Rubisco (V_{cmax}). But as CO₂ substrate availability increases at higher CO₂ concentrations, photorespiration is increasingly suppressed. Under these conditions, either the ability of electron transport to support the regeneration of RuBP or other reactions within the Calvin Cycle itself become limiting for photosynthesis, such that photosynthesis is limited by the maximum electron transport rate (J_{max}) (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980). At very high CO₂ concentrations, the ability to convert triose phosphates into sucrose and starch, and thereby to release inorganic phosphorous, puts an upper ceiling on A_{net} (Sharkey, 1985).

With limited substrate for photosynthesis, growth at low CO₂ greatly decreases A_{net} (Polley *et al.*, 1993; Sage, 1995; Tissue *et al.*, 1995), and consequently biomass production (Agüera *et al.*, 2006; Li *et al.*, 2014; Sage and Coleman, 2001; Temme *et al.*, 2015). In the experiments reviewed by Sage (1995), C₃ species (such as wheat, oat, bean, and rice) had a photosynthetic performance between 25 and 50 % lower at 200 ppm CO₂ than at 360 ppm. Cowling and Sage (1998) found that total biomass declined up to 77 % when *Phaseolus vulgaris* was grown at 200 ppm in comparison to 380 ppm CO₂. A recent meta-analysis by Temme *et al.* (2013) found that a 50 % reduction in growth CO₂ decreased A_{net} by 38 % and biomass by 47 %. However, while the decrease in A_{net} is well-

established, it is still difficult to generalize how V_{cmax} and J_{max} respond to growth at low CO_2 conditions. The literature presents few examples where these variables were measured in low CO_2 -grown plants, and the few results are highly variable, with increases in the rate of both parameters (Ripley *et al.*, 2013), increased V_{cmax} but not J_{max} (Anderson *et al.*, 2001), or no change in V_{cmax} and J_{max} between low CO_2 - and ambient CO_2 -grown plants (Cunniff *et al.*, 2017).

In order to cope with the low photosynthetic rates imposed by their C-limited environment, low CO_2 -grown plants commonly develop mechanisms to enhance CO_2 uptake. These include increased stomatal density and aperture to increase the influx of CO_2 through the stomata (Elliott-Kingston *et al.*, 2016; Franks *et al.*, 2012), and higher expression of Rubisco and its activating enzyme, Rubisco activase, in order to enhance carboxylation rates (Sage and Coleman, 2001). Despite these adjustments, however, the decrease in productivity in low CO_2 -grown plants is ubiquitous across low CO_2 studies (Ehleringer *et al.* 2005; Cunniff *et al.* 2017; Temme *et al.* 2013).

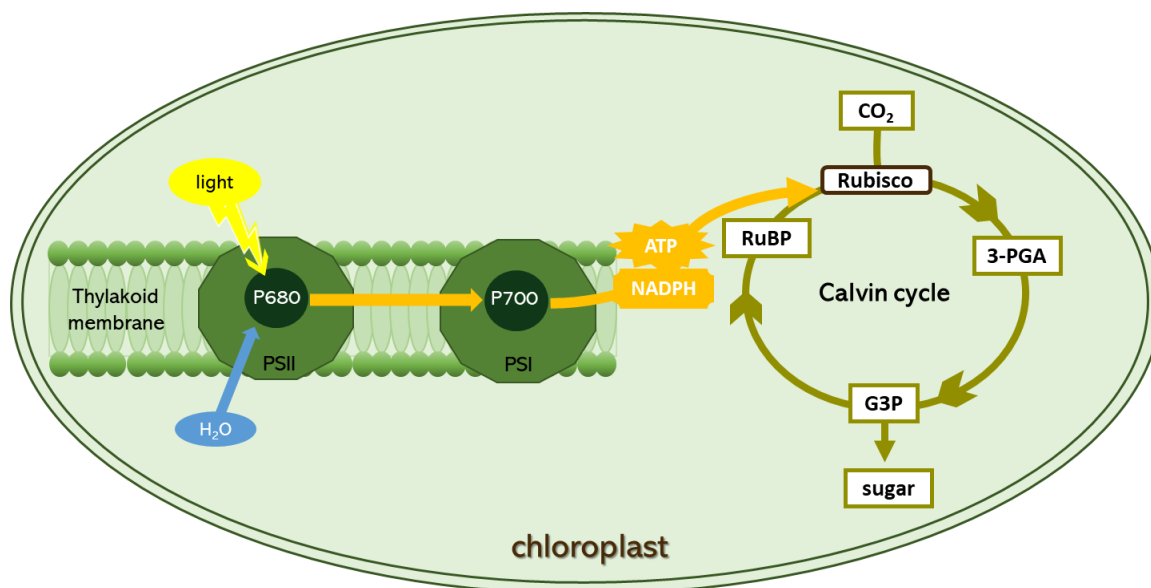


Figure 1.2. Simplified schematic of photosynthesis. Rubisco, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase; PSII, photosystem II; P680, photosystem II primary donor; PSI, photosystem I; P700, photosystem I primary donor; NADPH, nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate; ATP, adenosine triphosphate; 3-PGA, 3-phosphoglycerate; G3P, glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate; RuBP, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate. Figure modified from Taiz and Zeiger (2010).

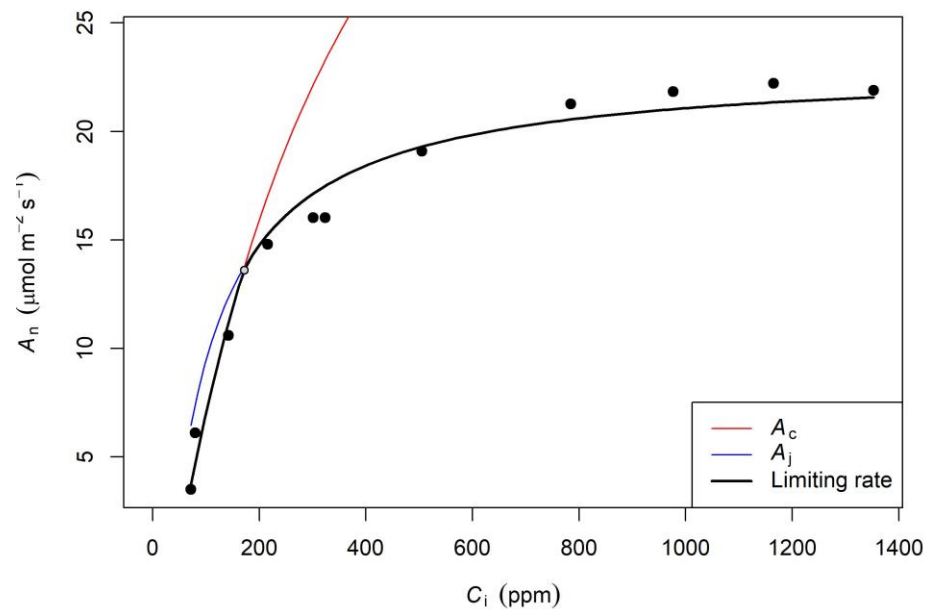


Figure 1.3. Photosynthetic CO₂ response curve based on the Farquhar, Berry and von Caemmerer (1980) biochemical model of photosynthesis. The measurement of net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}) across a range of intercellular CO₂ concentrations (C_i) is used to derive the biochemical limitation of A_{net} from the maximum carboxylation rates of Rubisco (V_{cmax} , A_c , red line), and the maximum electron transport rates (J_{max} , A_j , blue line). The limiting rate (black line) is determined as the minimum A_{net} from the two biochemical limitations, which fits the measured observations. Data from *Elymus canadensis*, as described in Chapter 2.

1.1.1.2 Photorespiration

While Rubisco can fix CO₂ in photosynthesis, Rubisco is a dual function enzyme that can both carboxylate and oxygenate RuBP (Spreitzer and Salvucci, 2002). As shown in Figure 1.4, in contrast to the two molecules of PGA produced in a carboxylation event, oxygenation of RuBP by Rubisco produces one molecule of PGA and one of 2-phosphoglycolate (PG). As PG is toxic if it accumulates in plant cells (Zelitch *et al.*, 2009), it must be processed via photorespiration. The PG is converted to glycolate, which is shuttled to the peroxisome, where it is converted to glyoxylate and then (with the addition of NH₂) into glycine. This glycine is converted to serine in the mitochondria, releasing a molecule each of CO₂ and NH₄, and consuming NADH₂. The serine is shuttled back to the peroxisome where it is converted to pyruvate and then glycerate, with the latter reaction consuming more NADH₂. The glycerate can then be phosphorylated to form PGA in the chloroplast, at the cost of an ATP, while another ATP is used in photorespiration to produce the glutamate needed to provide NH₂ for the production of glycine. Therefore, overall, photorespiration consumes ATP and reducing power, while releasing previously fixed CO₂.

Photorespiration has long been considered a wasteful process that reduces the overall energy efficiency of C assimilation (Andrews, 1978; Maurino and Peterhansel, 2010; Spreitzer and Salvucci, 2002). However, recent studies have shown that photorespiration can have an important role in nitrogen assimilation by providing reductant for nitrate (NO₃⁻) reduction (Bloom *et al.*, 2014; Busch *et al.*, 2018; Rachmilevitch *et al.*, 2004): as photorespiration rates increase at low CO₂, NO₃⁻ assimilation may be facilitated in low CO₂- compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants (see Figure 1.5 and Section 1.1.2).

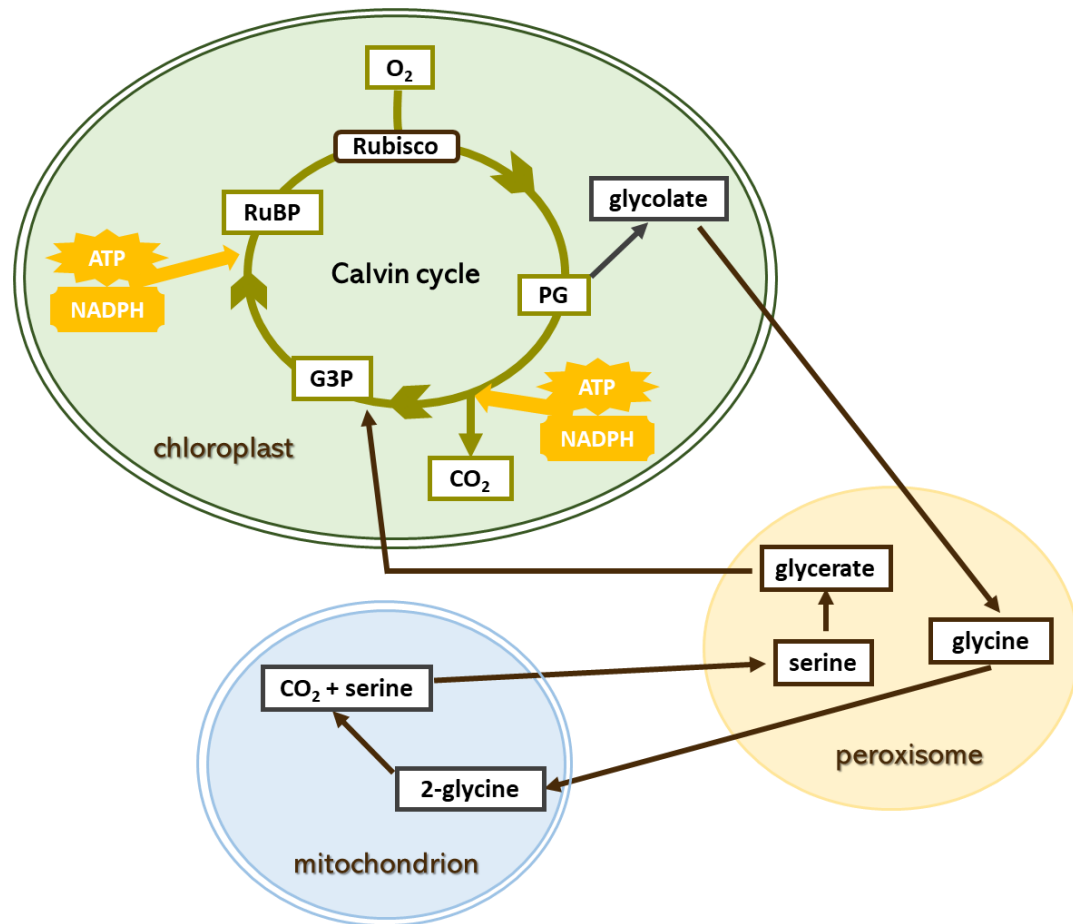


Figure 1.4. Photorespiratory pathway. Rubisco, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase; PG, phosphoglycolate; G3P, glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate; RuBP, ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate; NADPH, nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate; ATP, adenosine triphosphate. Figure modified from Taiz and Zeiger (2010).

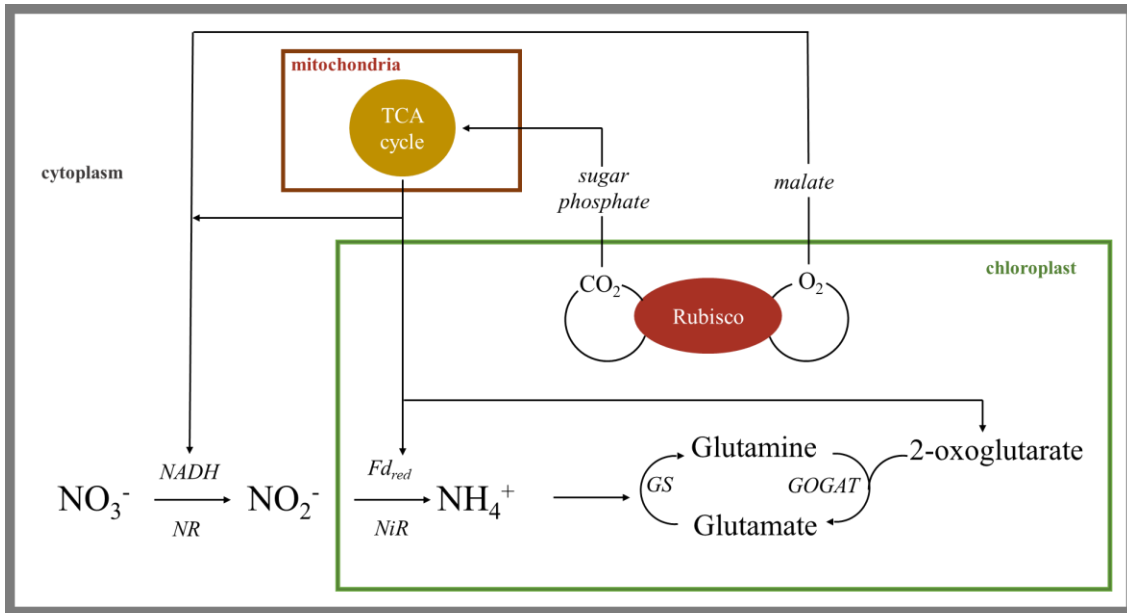


Figure 1.5. Simplified schematic of enzymes and substrates involved in inorganic N conversion that are derived from the photosynthetic and photorespiratory pathways. Nitrate (NO_3^-) is converted to nitrite (NO_2^-) by nitrate reductase (NR) using nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide (NADH). Nitrite reductase (NiR), using reduced ferredoxin (Fd_{red}) as an electron donor, reduces NO_2^- to ammonium (NH_4^+). NH_4^+ is then converted to glutamine by glutamine synthase (GS), while glutamine 2-oxoglutarate aminotransferase (GOGAT) converts glutamine and 2-oxoglutarate into glutamate. NADH, Fd_{red} , and 2-oxoglutarate are produced during the tricarboxylic acid (TCA) cycle, which is fueled by sugar phosphates produced during photosynthetic CO_2 assimilation by Ribulose-1,5-bisphosphate carboxylase/oxygenase (Rubisco). Malate derived from photorespiration (O_2 fixation by Rubisco) generates NADH and can also be used during the reduction of NO_3^- to NO_2^- in the cytoplasm. Figure derived from Andrews *et al.* (2013), Dutilleul *et al.* (2005), Krapp (2015), Nunes-Nesi *et al.* (2010), and Xu *et al.* (2012).

1.1.1.3 Respiration

Respiration involves the breakdown of glucose formed via photosynthesis to produce ATP to fuel plant metabolism (Plaxton and Podestá, 2006). Glucose is initially broken into pyruvate (glycolysis), which is oxidized to form acetyl-CoA, releasing a molecule of CO₂. The acetyl-CoA then enters the tricarboxylic acid pathway, where it is oxidized to CO₂, producing reductants for use in the mitochondrial electron transport chain. Oxidation of these reductants (and succinate, which is also created in the Citric Acid cycle) generates a proton gradient across the inner membrane of the mitochondria that drives ATP synthesis. Both respiration and photorespiration consume O₂ and release CO₂, but mitochondrial respiration occurs in both the light and in the dark, unlike photorespiration, which operates only in the light.

Possible effects of growth at low CO₂ conditions on respiration, however, have been scarcely explored. Decreased respiration rates in low CO₂-grown plants may be expected due to reduced carbohydrate availability and a lower demand for respiratory activity under a low growth rate environment. Indeed, this hypothesis aligns with the findings of González-Meler *et al.* (2009), who observed decreased respiration rates in *Arabidopsis thaliana* grown at 200 ppm compared to 370 ppm. Cowling and Sage (1998), however, found that respiration rates in low CO₂-grown *Phaseolus vulgaris* varied depending on growth temperature. Since these two studies seem to be the only available works that directly measured respiration in plants grown from seed at low CO₂ conditions, more data is required before a better understanding of respiratory regulation in low CO₂-grown plants can be built.

1.1.2 Nitrogen assimilation in plants

Nitrogen is a highly mobile element circulating between the atmosphere, soil and living organisms, and is involved in the formation of major macromolecules in plants, such as proteins, nucleic acids, and chlorophyll (Krapp, 2015; Mengel *et al.*, 2001). Nitrogen has been a major limitation on plant productivity in many terrestrial ecosystems on geological

timescales (Canfield *et al.* 2010; Falkowski 1997). Nitrogen is particularly limiting in temperate and higher latitude ecosystems where nitrification rates are low (Galloway *et al.*, 2004), and currently also limits plant yield in most agricultural systems (Robertson and Vitousek, 2009). Nitrogen is available for plant uptake in organic forms, mostly as amino acids, and as inorganic compounds, mainly as nitrate (NO_3^-) and ammonium (NH_4^+) (Lipson and Nasholm, 2001; Nacry *et al.*, 2013). Which N form is more readily available to plants depends on soil properties, such as grain size, pH, and ion exchange capacity, as well the soil microbiota (Stevenson *et al.*, 1999; Wardle, 1992).

A simplified schematic of NO_3^- reduction is shown in Figure 1.5. First, NO_3^- is reduced to nitrite (NO_2^-) by nitrate reductase (NR), using NADH; NO_2^- is then converted to NH_4^+ by nitrite reductase (NiR) (Foyer and Noctor 2006). NH_4^+ that has been converted from NO_3^- or taken up from the soil is then assimilated via the glutamine synthetase (GS)/glutamine 2-oxoglutarate aminotransferase (GOGAT) cycle into glutamine and glutamate (Krapp 2015). Levels of cytoplasmic NADH depend on photorespiration rates, since malate is exported during photorespiration from the chloroplast to the peroxisome, where it generates NADH (Rachmilevitch *et al.*, 2004). Increased cytoplasmic NADH levels at low CO_2 could then enhance NO_3^- reduction, which contrasts with elevated CO_2 studies where decreased photorespiration rates have been shown to decrease NO_3^- reduction (Bloom *et al.*, 2010; 2012).

The dynamics of N uptake and assimilation from different N sources may be different between plants grown at past low CO_2 levels in comparison to modern plants, since photosynthetic rates decrease while photorespiration increases at low CO_2 growth conditions. First, meeting the energy requirements for N assimilation at low CO_2 becomes more challenging due to the limited carbohydrate supply (Pace *et al.*, 1990; Sage and Coleman, 2001). Second, the photorespiratory process, which is enhanced at low CO_2 , can provide an additional source of reductant availability for the reduction of NO_3^- (Busch *et al.*, 2018; Rachmilevitch *et al.*, 2004).

1.1.3 Stable Carbon and Nitrogen isotope compositions in plants

Isotopes are atoms with the same number of protons and electrons but different numbers of neutrons. They are denoted based on their atomic mass, for example, in ^{12}C the number 12 represents the sum of 6 neutrons and 6 protons. Stable isotopes are those that are energetically stable and do not decay, meaning they are not radioactive (Sharp, 2007). Since isotopic differences are exceedingly small, isotopic compositions (δ) are expressed in parts per thousand deviation from an accepted standard as:

$$\delta(\text{‰}) = \left(\frac{R_{\text{sample}} - R_{\text{standard}}}{R_{\text{standard}}} \right)$$

where R is the ratio between the heavy to light isotope for the sample (R_{sample}) and the standard (R_{standard}) (Sharp, 2007).

The natural abundance of the heavier and rarer C and N stable isotopes (^{13}C and ^{15}N , respectively) relative to the more abundant isotopes ^{12}C and ^{14}N , defined as $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$, are commonly used indicators with several applications in plant biology and paleoecology (Breecker, 2017; Farquhar *et al.*, 1989; Michener and Lajtha, 2007). The primary characterization of C isotope composition in plant tissues is based on the discrimination against ^{13}C that occurs during photosynthesis. Molecules of ^{13}C -containing CO_2 diffuse more slowly than $^{12}\text{CO}_2$ molecules, and the enzyme Rubisco further discriminates against ^{13}C during photosynthesis (Farquhar *et al.*, 1982, 1989). The resulting $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of plant tissues is thus dependent on CO_2 supply through the stomata and enzymatic demand for CO_2 (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013; Farquhar *et al.*, 1982; Michener and Lajtha, 2007).

Some of the many applications of plant $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ include the use of leaf $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ to identify photosynthetic pathways, *i.e.*, C_3 , C_4 , or CAM (Farquhar *et al.*, 1989). In C_3 photosynthesis, the diffusion of CO_2 through the stomata has an apparent fractionation of about 4.4 ‰ and Rubisco discriminates against ^{13}C by about 29 ‰. The competition between these two processes produces an average $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of about -27 ‰ for C_3 plants utilizing atmospheric CO_2 with $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of about -8 ‰ (Sharp, 2007). C_4 photosynthesis, however, is initially catalyzed by a different enzyme, phosphoenolpyruvate (PEP)

carboxylase, which has a discrimination of approximately -6 ‰ during CO_2 fixation (Farquhar, 1983). PEP carboxylase then produces C_4 compounds that are catabolized in the bundle sheath cells, resulting in the release of CO_2 , which accumulates around Rubisco, suppressing photorespiration and stimulating photosynthesis (Ehleringer and Pearcy, 1983). A small amount of ^{13}C -enriched CO_2 leaks from the bundle sheath, which slightly lowers the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of the CO_2 left for fixation. These processes, coupled with the initial diffusive fractionation of $\sim 4.4\text{ ‰}$ for atmospheric CO_2 entering the stomata, causes C_4 plants to have a more positive $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ than C_3 species: -13 ‰ on average (Berry, 1989). The Crassulacean acid metabolism (CAM) pathway relies on the same enzymes as the C_4 pathway, but there is a temporal segregation in the activity of the enzymes involved, as well as reduced CO_2 leakage, since cells are large and succulent, and thus the average $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ in CAM plants clusters around -11 ‰ (Farquhar, 1983). However, some species use the CAM pathway facultatively, switching between C_3 and CAM photosynthesis, resulting in the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of facultative CAM plants ranging between -11 ‰ and -27 ‰ (Farquhar, 1983).

The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of tree rings can also be used to derive environmental conditions during tree growth (Lipp *et al.*, 1991; McCarroll and Loader, 2004). For example, the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of the cellulose found in tree rings can be used as a record of shifts in atmospheric CO_2 concentrations, changes in temperature that affect C assimilation, and rates of respiration of the surrounding vegetation (Lipp *et al.*, 1991; Mazany *et al.*, 1980). A similar use to this indicator can be applied in paleo-reconstructions, and the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of fossil samples can be used, for example, to derive past atmospheric CO_2 concentrations (Cui and Schubert, 2016; Penuelas and Azcon-Bieto, 1992), identify plant functional types (Brooks *et al.*, 1997; Porter *et al.*, 2017), and characterize extreme weather events that changed plant community composition in the past (Hoetzel *et al.*, 2013; Keeley and Rundel, 2005). The carbon isotope composition of other plant tissues can also be used to identify photosynthetic pathways and environmental conditions. For instance, Hoetzel *et al.* (2013) used the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of plant waxes to reconstruct the expansion of C_4 grasses after intense fire activity that occurred during the Pliocene (between 8 and 3 million years ago).

The $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of different plant tissues is highly variable (from -10 to $+10$ ‰; Evans, 2001). Such variation results from differences in the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of the N sources available to plants (*e.g.*, NH_3^+ vs NH_4^+), which depends on the N formation process (*e.g.*, mineralization, nitrification), and, within plant tissues, are a product of enzymatic discrimination against the heavier N isotope (Hogberg, 1997). Different N sources are taken up and assimilated in plants through diverse mechanisms whose isotopic discrimination is mostly regulated by external N availability (Evans, 2001; Robinson, 2001). Nitrate reductase, the enzyme responsible for nitrate assimilation in roots and leaves, shows a barely detectable discrimination against ^{15}N ; however, as nitrate availability increases in the growing medium, isotopic discrimination can proportionally shift from 0 to about -4 ‰ (Hogberg, 1997). Isotopic discrimination during ammonium assimilation can occur during the active transport of ammonium into roots cells, and enzymatic discrimination by glutamine synthetase (Yoneyama *et al.*, 1991; Evans, 2001). Discrimination also depends on ammonium availability as, for instance, Yoneyama *et al.* (1991) found that $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in *Oryza sativa* shifted from $+4.1$ to $+12.6$ ‰ when the ammonium concentration in the growth medium increased from 1.4 to 7.3 mM.

Plant $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ has also been a valuable tool for animal paleobiologic studies in the reconstruction of ancient food webs (Boecklen *et al.*, 2011). Primary producers provide food sources with distinct $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ profiles that will be reflected in the tissues of consumers (Casey and Post, 2011). The $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of bulk collagen of consumers usually reflects the isotopic composition of the plants being consumed, with a ^{15}N enrichment of 2 to 5 ‰ per trophic level (Garten *et al.*, 2008); the average ^{15}N -enrichment is typically ~ 3.4 ‰ (Minagawa and Wada, 1984; Post, 2002). Much of our current understanding of N fractionation in plants, however, derives from the functioning of N dynamics in extant species grown under modern CO_2 concentrations (Krapp, 2015). Thus, verifying potential shifts in N discrimination when plants are exposed to low growth CO_2 conditions could help validate assumptions based on $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ from plant samples dating from low- CO_2 periods of geological time.

1.2 Plant-mycorrhizal interactions

Mycorrhizal associations are defined as the mutualistic symbiotic association between soil fungi and plant roots, functioning through the reciprocal exchange of mineral and organic resources (Johnson *et al.*, 1997). Mycorrhizal fungi are classified into four types according to their morphology and common choice of host plant: arbuscular, ericoid, orchid, and ectomycorrhizae (Brundrett and Tedersoo, 2018). Arbuscular mycorrhizae (Figure 1.6) is the most abundant group, occurring in more than 73 % of all known vascular plants to form mycorrhizal associations (Brundrett, 2009). Arbuscular mycorrhizae are also the most ancient type of mycorrhizal fungi, being found in fossils estimated to be more than 460 million years old (Redecker *et al.*, 2000). The arbuscular colonization starts after the contact between the fungal hyphae and the root epidermis where the fungus grows into the root cortex and develops highly branched hyphal structures called arbuscules (Gutjahr and Parniske, 2013). The arbuscules are then surrounded by a plant-derived periarbuscular membrane that forms an interface for nutrient exchange between the plant and the fungus (Lanfranco *et al.*, 2018).

While the arbuscular mycorrhizal association has been established to be beneficial to both the fungi and plant host, there is considerable uncertainty regarding the extent to which its benefits are maintained under varying growth CO₂ concentrations (Becklin *et al.*, 2016; Tang *et al.*, 2009). For instance, in elevated CO₂ studies, there are examples where mycorrhizal colonization and plant growth are enhanced at elevated compared to ambient CO₂ growth conditions (Lovelock *et al.*, 1996; Rillig *et al.*, 1999), while in others, mycorrhizal colonization only benefits certain plant groups (Tang *et al.*, 2009), or no change in colonization is observed (Allen *et al.*, 2005; Clark *et al.*, 2009). Similarly, the only available study that investigated mycorrhizal association in low CO₂-grown plants (Becklin *et al.*, 2016) found that association with arbuscular mycorrhizae had opposite effects on the growth of two *Taraxacum* species.

Despite the scarcity of data on mycorrhizal associations at low CO₂ conditions, it is likely that the exchange of resources in this association at low CO₂ concentrations of the past differ from the plant-fungal interaction observed in current CO₂ conditions. This

mutualism has been considered evolutionarily stable due to its bidirectional control, where plants reward the best fungal partners with more carbohydrates, while the fungi increase nutrient transfer to roots that offer more carbohydrates (Kiers *et al.*, 2011). With reduced photosynthesis and carbohydrate production caused by limited CO₂ availability, plants grown at low CO₂ conditions would have a decreased capacity to allocate C compounds to the fungi. In turn, hyphal growth and nutrient uptake and transfer, especially nitrogen and phosphorus, from the mycorrhizae to the plant might be reduced.

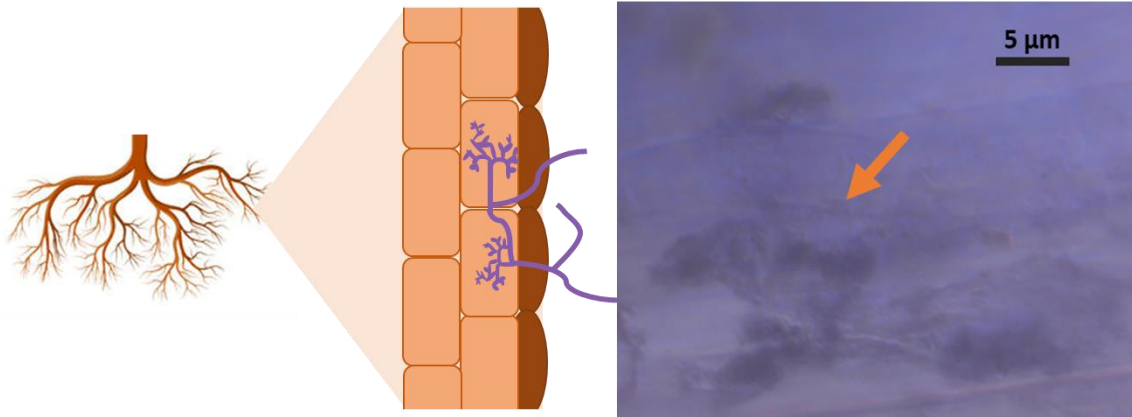


Figure 1.6. Root colonization by an arbuscular mycorrhizal fungus. Cartoon illustration of an arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi inside root cells showing the arbuscules (tree-like structures) connected to hyphae (purple lines). To the right, light microscopy showing arbuscules of *Glomus intraradices* indicated by the arrow.

As C and N dynamics between plants and fungi is influenced by changes in CO₂ availability (Alberton *et al.*, 2005; Treseder, 2004), there could be differences in the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ between non-mycorrhizal and mycorrhizal plants growing at past low CO₂ conditions. In plants growing at ambient CO₂ conditions, arbuscular mycorrhizal association can reduce discrimination against ¹³C by stimulating increased plant water-use efficiency (Querejeta *et al.*, 2006, 2003). Additionally, the organic N transferred from the fungus to the plant is usually depleted of ¹⁵N due to enzymatic reactions within the fungi (Hobbie *et al.*, 2005). Thus, investigating plant C and N isotope compositions of mycorrhizal plants grown at past low CO₂ levels can offer new insights to interpreting isotope signals from ancient plant samples known to form mycorrhizal associations.

1.3 Effects of growth CO₂ on defense compound production

The production of defensive compounds is a major plant strategy against herbivory and parasitism (Karban and Baldwin, 2007). The production of such compounds, however, is usually highly costly to the C budget of plants (Zangerl and Bazzaz, 1992). Thus, plants must balance C investment between primary functions to sustain growth and the production of defense elements that enhance their fitness (Baldwin, 2010; Hartmann, 1996; Holopainen, 2004).

Defense compounds deter herbivory through two major mechanisms: anti-nutrition and toxicity (Chen, 2008). Anti-nutrition refers to limiting food access to herbivore, for example, by fortifying cell walls or attracting natural enemies of the attacking herbivore. Toxicity refers to the metabolites produced by plants that can disturb digestion or inhibit hormonal pathways in the herbivore (Chen, 2008). Many classes of metabolites are produced with defensive functions, including terpenes, alkenes, alcohols, esters, and other secondary compounds (Kesselmeier and Staudt, 1999; Peñuelas and Llusà, 2003). Terpenes, which are C-based compounds formed by isoprene units (C₅), are the most

abundant group of volatile organic compound emitted by plants, and form the majority of the compounds present in tree resin (Holopainen, 2004; Langenheim, 1990; Pichersky and Raguso, 2018).

Resins are mixtures of terpenes and phenolic compounds produced in internal ducts or specialized glands of plants (Langenheim, 1990). Resin ducts form specialized secretory structures to store resins and contain their potential toxic effect to metabolic functions of the surrounding cells (Langenheim, 1994). In conifers, resin duct size and density can be used as indicators of resin production and overall host resistance against herbivory and pathogens (Boucher *et al.*, 2001; Martin *et al.*, 2002; Tomlin and Borden, 1997). Often, extant conifers display a fixed number and position of ducts in their needles, such that this anatomical feature is consistent within a taxonomic level (Wu and Hu, 1997), and is thus commonly used in the identification of fossil samples (Falcon-Lang *et al.*, 2016; Harland *et al.*, 2007; Manum *et al.*, 2000; Zidianakis *et al.*, 2016). However, if plants are exposed to conditions (such as low CO₂ concentrations) that limit terpene, and consequently resin production, it is unknown whether the formation of these structures would also be affected.

According to the carbon-nutrient balance hypothesis (Bryant *et al.*, 1983), allocation to defense compounds depends on C and nutrient availability and the relationship of the concentration of these elements to growth rate. This hypothesis predicts that C and N will be allocated to the production of secondary metabolites only after the main requirements for growth have been met (Hamilton *et al.*, 2001). Since this hypothesis was put forward, there has been much consideration given to possible effects of increased atmospheric CO₂ on plant defenses (Fajer *et al.*, 1992; Noctor and Mhamdi, 2017; Staudt *et al.*, 2001; Zavala *et al.*, 2012). Intuitively, conditions that favor the accumulation of non-structural carbohydrates, such as elevated CO₂, would be expected to increase defense compound concentrations (Mohan *et al.*, 2006; Novick *et al.*, 2012). In contrast, as low CO₂ concentrations constrain growth, allocation to secondary compounds may be suppressed. However, changes in the production of defense compounds induced by elevated CO₂ seem to be species-specific (Peñuelas and Estiarte, 1998; Robinson *et al.*, 2012; Zavala *et al.*, 2012), and increases in C allocation to such compounds have been shown to occur

only when water or nutrients are limiting (Lambers, 1993). So far, no studies have analyzed how low CO₂ impacts the allocation of resources to defense compounds; such studies could underpin a better understanding of plant-animal interactions in the recent evolutionary past when carbon was limiting.

1.4 A caveat in low-CO₂ studies: The possibility of plant adaptation since low-CO₂ periods

While on geological time scales low CO₂ periods seem not distant, it can be argued that since the last low CO₂ period enough time may have passed for modern genotypes to adapt to rising CO₂ conditions. Especially considering that evolutionary changes in certain plant traits may take place relatively fast: for instance, Franks et al. (2007) showed that the evolutionary changes in the flowering time in *Brassica rapa* happened over the span of seven years as adaptive shifts occurred due to changes in precipitation. Thus, since 20,000 years ago, at the end of the LGM when CO₂ was as low as 180 ppm (Petit et al., 1999), plant species that were more physiologically plastic may have adapted traits to explore the increasing availability of atmospheric CO₂.

Furthermore, Gerhart and Ward (2010) suggested that since plants can readily alter biochemical and biophysical processes (*i.e.* acclimate) to changes in growth CO₂ levels, the response of modern genotypes may not precisely represent past genotype responses to past CO₂ levels. Thus, the plant responses to growth at low CO₂ conditions discussed above may represent short-term physiological adjustments instead of the adaptive capability of plants to respond to low growth CO₂. In this context, it is important to distinguish acclimation as the short-term physiological, structural or biochemical adjustments induced by an environmental stimulus, and adaptation as the response of a species to an environmental stimulus that persists over multiple generations (Smith and Dukes, 2013). While whether plants have adapted to cope with rising CO₂ levels since the LGM is uncertain, modern plant genotypes represent in most cases the only subjects available for low CO₂ studies.

1.5 Research questions and hypothesis

There is still much to be investigated regarding how a low CO₂-world influenced plant physiological and biochemical processes, particularly since plant C and N cycling in past C-limited environments had implications for plant defense, mycorrhizal interactions and the baseline isotopic composition of ancient food webs. Based on this premise, I investigated the following research questions:

Chapter 2: Are growth and the N isotope composition of low CO₂-grown plants affected by different N-sources in a different way than plants grown at current CO₂ conditions?

Considering that a low CO₂ environment may facilitate the assimilation of NO₃⁻ over NH₄⁺, plants fertilized with NO₃⁻, compared to NH₄⁺-fertilized plants, may have higher growth and photosynthetic capacity due to higher N availability during its allocation to the photosynthetic apparatus. As well, by limiting soil N availability, the combined C and N limitation may cause low CO₂-grown plants to decrease discrimination against the heavier N isotope (¹⁵N), resulting in a more positive N isotope composition.

Chapter 3: How does reduced C availability in low CO₂ conditions alter the exchange of resources between plants and fungi in a mycorrhizal association?

I envisioned two possible contrasting scenarios: the mutualistic interaction may be enhanced, or both organisms might conserve resources and their exchange of C and N resources would decrease. In the first scenario, plants may more closely associate with mycorrhizae in order to stimulate the transfer of N from the fungi, and this extra N can then be invested in the photosynthetic apparatus, increasing photosynthetic rates and carbohydrate production that can be further transferred to the fungi. In the second scenario, plants may adopt a more conservative strategy that would reduce carbohydrate allocation to mycorrhizal fungi, thus restricting the mutualistic exchange in the association. Either scenario is likely to change the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of tissues of low CO₂- compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants. In the first, higher C assimilation would decrease discrimination against ¹³C, while a higher N flow provided by the fungi would allow greater discrimination against ¹⁵N. The opposite may be seen in the second scenario: the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of uninoculated control plants and mycorrhizal plants could be similar if there are no differences between them in C assimilation, but if C assimilation decreases in

mycorrhizal plants, plants may increase discrimination against ^{13}C . Additionally, plant roots may have to compete with the fungi for soil N in this second scenario, thus leading to reduced discrimination against ^{15}N .

Chapter 4: Is the ability to produce defense compounds reduced in low CO₂-grown plants compared to plants grown at modern CO₂ conditions? Due to reduced carbon availability, the ability of low CO₂-grown plants to photosynthetically fix carbon declines, and so does biomass. With limitations being imposed on primary functions to sustain growth, plants grown at low CO₂ could produce fewer secondary metabolites for use as defense compounds compared to plants grown at ambient CO₂ conditions.

References

- Agüera, E., Ruano, D., Cabello, P., de la Haba, P., 2006. Impact of atmospheric CO₂ on growth, photosynthesis and nitrogen metabolism in cucumber (*Cucumis sativus* L.) plants. *J. Plant Physiol.* 163, 809–817. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.JPLPH.2005.08.010>
- Alberton, O., Kuyper, T.W., Gorissen, A., 2005. Taking mycocentrism seriously: Mycorrhizal fungal and plant responses to elevated CO₂. *New Phytol.* 167, 859–868. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2005.01458.x>
- Allen, M.F., Klironomos, J.N., Treseder, K.K., Oechel, W.C., 2005. Responses of soil biota to elevated CO₂ in a chaparral ecosystem. *Ecol. Appl.* 15, 1701–1711. <https://doi.org/10.1890/03-5425>
- Anderson, L.J., Maherali, H., Johnson, H.B., Polley, H.W., Jackson, R.B., 2001. Gas exchange and photosynthetic acclimation over subambient to elevated CO₂ in a C₃-C₄ grassland. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 693–707. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1354-1013.2001.00438.x>
- Andres, R.J., Boden, T.A., Bréon, F.-M., Ciais, P., Davis, S., Erickson, D., Gregg, J.S., Jacobson, A., Marland, G., Miller, J., Oda, T., Olivier, J.G.J., Raupach, M.R., Rayner, P., Treanton, K., 2012. A synthesis of carbon dioxide emissions from fossil-fuel combustion. *Biogeosciences* 9, 1845–1871. <https://doi.org/10.5194/bg-9-1845-2012>
- Andrews, M., Raven, J.A., Lea, P.J., 2013. Do plants need nitrate? The mechanisms by which nitrogen form affects plants. *Ann. Appl. Biol.* 163, 174–199. <https://doi.org/10.1111/aab.12045>

- Andrews, T.J., 1978. Photorespiration - still unavoidable? *FEBS Lett.* 90, 1–9. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0014-5793\(78\)80286-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/0014-5793(78)80286-5)
- Augustin, L., Barbanate, C., Barnes, P.R.F., Barnola, J.M., Bigler, M., Castellano, E., Cattani, O., Chappellaz, J., Dahl-Jensen, D., Delmonte, B., et al., 2004. Eight glacial cycles from an Antarctic ice core EPICA community members. *Nature* 429, 623–628.
- Baldwin, I.T., 2010. Plant volatiles. *Curr. Biol.* 20, R392–R397. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cub.2010.02.052>
- Bazzaz, F.A., Bazzaz, F., 1996. *Plants in changing environments: Linking physiological, population, and community ecology.* Cambridge University Press.
- Becklin, K.M., Mullinix, G.W.R., Ward, J.K., 2016. Host plant physiology and mycorrhizal functioning shift across a glacial through future [CO₂] Gradient. *Plant Physiol.* 172, 789–801. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.16.00837>
- Beerling, D.J., Chaloner, W.G., 1994. Atmospheric CO₂ changes since the last glacial maximum: evidence from the stomatal density record of fossil leaves. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 81, 11–17. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0034-6667\(94\)90123-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/0034-6667(94)90123-6)
- Berry, J.A., 1989. Studies of mechanisms affecting the fractionation of carbon isotopes in photosynthesis, in: *Stable Isotopes in Ecological Research.* Springer, New York, NY, pp. 82–94. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-3498-2_6
- Bloom, A.J., Asensio, J.S.R., Randall, L., Rachmilevitch, S., Cousins, A.B., Carlisle, E.A., 2012. CO₂ enrichment inhibits shoot nitrate assimilation in C₃ but not C₄ plants and slows growth under nitrate in C₃ plants. *Ecology* 93, 355–367. <https://doi.org/10.1890/11-0485.1>
- Bloom, A.J., Burger, M., Kimball, B., Jr, P.P., 2014. Nitrate assimilation is inhibited by elevated CO₂ in field-grown wheat. *Nat. Clim. Chang.* 4, 477–180. <https://doi.org/10.1038/NCLIMATE2183>
- Bloom, A J, Burger, M., Rubio Asensio, J.S., Cousins, A.B., 2010. Carbon dioxide enrichment inhibits nitrate assimilation in wheat and *Arabidopsis*. *Science* 328, 899–903. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1186440>
- Boecklen, W.J., Yarnes, C.T., Cook, B.A., James, A.C., 2011. On the use of stable isotopes in trophic ecology. *Annu. Rev. Ecol. Evol. Syst.* 42, 411–440. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-ecolsys-102209-144726>
- Boucher, D., Lavallée, R., Mauffette, Y., 2001. Biological performance of the white pine weevil in relation to the anatomy of the resin canal system of four different host species. *Can. J. For. Res.* 31, 2035–2041. <https://doi.org/10.1139/cjfr-31-11-2035>
- Breecker, D.O., 2017. Atmospheric pCO₂ control on speleothem stable carbon isotope

- compositions. *Earth Planet. Sci. Lett.* 458, 58–68. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.epsl.2016.10.042>
- Brooks, J.R., Flanagan, L.B., Buchmann, N., Ehleringer, J.R., 1997. Carbon isotope composition of boreal plants: functional grouping of life forms. *Oecologia* 110, 301–311. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420050163>
- Brundrett, M.C., 2009. Mycorrhizal associations and other means of nutrition of vascular plants: Understanding the global diversity of host plants by resolving conflicting information and developing reliable means of diagnosis. *Plant Soil*. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11104-008-9877-9>
- Bryant, J.P., Chapin, F.S., Klein, D.R., 1983. Carbon / Nutrient balance of boreal plants in relation to vertebrate herbivory. *OIKOS* 40, 57–368.
- Busch, F.A., Sage, R.F., 2017. The sensitivity of photosynthesis to O₂ and CO₂ concentration identifies strong Rubisco control above the thermal optimum. *New Phytol.* 213, 1036–1051. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14258>
- Busch, F.A., Sage, R.F., Farquhar, G.D., 2018. Plants increase CO₂ uptake by assimilating nitrogen via the photorespiratory pathway. *Nat. Plants* 4, 46–54. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41477-017-0065-x>
- Cairney, J.W.G., 2000. Evolution of mycorrhiza systems. *Naturwissenschaften* 87, 467–475. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s001140050762>
- Canfield, D.E., Glazer, A.N., Falkowski, P.G., 2010. The evolution and future of Earth's nitrogen cycle. *Science* 330, 192–196. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1186120>
- Casey, M.M., Post, D.M., 2011. The problem of isotopic baseline: Reconstructing the diet and trophic position of fossil animals. *Earth-Science Rev.* 106, 131–148. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.EARSCIREV.2011.02.001>
- Cernusak, L.A., Ubierna, N., Winter, K., Holtum, J.A.M., Marshall, J.D., Farquhar, G.D., 2013. Environmental and physiological determinants of carbon isotope discrimination in terrestrial plants. *New Phytol.* 200, 950–965. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.12423>
- Chen, M.-S., 2008. Inducible direct plant defense against insect herbivores: A review. *Insect Sci.* 15, 101–114. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1744-7917.2008.00190.x>
- Clark, N.M., Rillig, M.C., Nowak, R.S., 2009. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungal abundance in the Mojave Desert: Seasonal dynamics and impacts of elevated CO₂. *J. Arid Environ.* 73, 834–843. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.JARIDENV.2009.03.004>
- Cowling, S. a, Sykes, M.T., 1999. Physiological significance of low atmospheric CO₂ for plant–climate interactions. *Quat. Res.* 52, 237–242. <https://doi.org/10.1006/qres.1999.2065>

- Cowling, S. A., Sage, R.F., 1998. Interactive effects of low atmospheric CO₂ and elevated temperature on growth, photosynthesis and respiration in *Phaseolus vulgaris*. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 21, 427–435. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00290.x>
- Cui, Y., Schubert, B.A., 2016. Quantifying uncertainty of past pCO₂ determined from changes in C₃ plant carbon isotope fractionation. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 172, 127–138. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.GCA.2015.09.032>
- Cunniff, J., Jones, G., Charles, M., Osborne, C.P., 2017. Yield responses of wild C₃ and C₄ crop progenitors to subambient CO₂: A test for the role of CO₂ limitation in the origin of agriculture. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 23, 380–393. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13473>
- Dutilleul, C., Lelarge, C., Prioul, J.-L., De Paepe, R., Foyer, C.H., Noctor, G., 2005. Mitochondria-driven changes in leaf NAD status exert a crucial influence on the control of nitrate assimilation and the integration of carbon and nitrogen metabolism. *Plant Physiol.* 139, 64–78. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.105.066399>
- Ehleringer, J., Pearcy, R.W., 1983. Variation in quantum yield for CO₂ uptake among C₃ and C₄ plants. *Plant Physiol.* 73, 555–559. <https://doi.org/https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.73.3.555>
- Ehleringer, J.R., Cerling, T.E., Dearing, M.D., 2005. *A History of atmospheric CO₂ and its effects on plants, animals, and ecosystems*, 1st ed. Springer, Salt Lake City, UT, USA.
- Elliott-Kingston, C., Haworth, M., Yearsley, J.M., Batke, S.P., Lawson, T., McElwain, J.C., 2016. Does size matter? Atmospheric CO₂ may be a stronger driver of stomatal closing rate than stomatal size in taxa that diversified under low CO₂. *Front. Plant Sci.* 7, 1253. <https://doi.org/10.3389/fpls.2016.01253>
- Evans, R.D., 2001. Physiological mechanisms influencing plant nitrogen isotope composition. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 121–126. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(01\)01889-1](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(01)01889-1)
- Fajer, E.D., Bowers, M.D., Bazzaz, F.A., 1992. The effect of nutrients and enriched CO₂ environments on production of carbon-based allelochemicals in *Plantago*: a test of the carbon/nutrient balance hypothesis. *Am. Nat.* 140, 707–723.
- Falcon-Lang, H.J., Mages, V., Collinson, M., 2016. The oldest *Pinus* and its preservation by fire. *Geology* 44, 303–306. <https://doi.org/10.1130/G37526.1>
- Falkowski, P.G., 1997. Evolution of the nitrogen cycle and its influence on the biological sequestration of CO₂ in the ocean. *Nature* 387, 272–274. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature02381.1>
- Farquhar, G., O’Leary, M., Berry, J., 1982. On the relationship between carbon isotope

- discrimination and the intercellular carbon dioxide concentration in leaves. *Aust. J. Plant Physiol.* 9, 121. <https://doi.org/10.1071/PP9820121>
- Farquhar, G.D., 1983. On the nature of carbon isotope discrimination in C_4 species. *Aust. J. Plant Physiol.* 10, 205–231. <https://doi.org/10.1071/PP9830205>
- Farquhar, G.D., Ehleringer, J.R., Hubick, K.T., 1989. Carbon isotope discrimination and photosynthesis. *Annu. Rev. Plant Physiol.* 503–537. <https://doi.org/10.1040-2519/89/0601-503>
- Farquhar, G.D., Sharkey, T.D., 2003. Stomatal conductance and photosynthesis. *Annu. Rev. Plant Physiol.* 33, 317–345. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.pp.33.060182.001533>
- Farquhar, G.D., von Caemmerer, S., 1982. Modelling of photosynthetic response to environmental conditions, in: *Physiological Plant Ecology II*. Springer Berlin Heidelberg, Berlin, Heidelberg, pp. 549–587. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-68150-9_17
- Farquhar, G.D., von Caemmerer, S., Berry, J.A., 1980. A biochemical model of photosynthetic CO_2 assimilation in leaves of C_3 species. *Planta* 149, 78–90. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00386231>
- Foyer, C.H., Noctor, G., 2006. Photosynthetic nitrogen assimilation and associated carbon and respiratory metabolism, Vol. 12. ed. Springer Science & Business Media.
- Franks, P.J., Leitch, I.J., Ruzsala, E.M., Hetherington, A.M., Beerling, D.J., 2012. Physiological framework for adaptation of stomata to CO_2 from glacial to future concentrations. *Philos. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. B. Biol. Sci.* 367, 537–546. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rstb.2011.0270>
- Franks, S.J., Sim, S., Weis, A.E. 2007. Rapid evolution of flowering time by an annual plant in response to a climate fluctuation. *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci.* 104, 1278–1282. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.06083791040>
- Galloway, J.N., Dentener, F.J., Capone, D.G., Boyer, E.W., Howarth, R.W., Seitzinger, S.P., Asner, G.P., Cleveland, C.C., Green, P.A., Holland, E.A., Karl, D.M., Michaels, A.F., Porter, J.H., Townsend, A.R., Vorosmarty, C.J., 2004. Nitrogen cycles: Past, present, and future. *Biogeochemistry* 70, 226–2004. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10533-004-0370-0>
- Garten, C.T., Hanson, P.J., Todd, D.E., Lu, B.B., Brice, D.J., 2008. Natural ^{15}N - and ^{13}C -abundance as indicators of forest nitrogen status and soil carbon dynamics, *Stable Isotopes in Ecology and Environmental Science: Second Edition*. <https://doi.org/10.1002/9780470691854.ch3>
- Gerhart, L.M., Ward, J.K., 2010. Plant responses to low $[CO_2]$ of the past. *New Phytol.*

188, 674–695. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2010.03441.x>

González-Meler, M.A., Blanc-Betes, E., Flower, C.E., Ward, J.K., Gomez-Casanovas, N., 2009. Plastic and adaptive responses of plant respiration to changes in atmospheric CO₂ concentration. *Physiol. Plant.* 137, 473–484. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1399-3054.2009.01262.x>

Gutjahr, C., Parniske, M., 2013. Cell and developmental biology of arbuscular mycorrhiza symbiosis. *Annu. Rev. Cell Dev. Biol.* 29, 593–617. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-cellbio-101512-122413>

Hamilton, J.G., Zangerl, A.R., DeLucia, E.H., Berenbaum, M.R., 2001. The carbon-nutrient balance hypothesis: Its rise and fall. *Ecol. Lett.* 4, 86–95. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1461-0248.2001.00192.x>

Harland, M., Francis, J.E., Brentnall, S.J., Beerling, D.J., 2007. Cretaceous (*Albian-Aptian*) conifer wood from Northern Hemisphere high latitudes: Forest composition and palaeoclimate. *Rev. Paleobotany Play.* 143, 167–196. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.revpalbo.2006.07.005>

Hartmann, T., 1996. Diversity and variability of plant secondary metabolism: a mechanistic view, in: *Proceedings of the 9th International Symposium on Insect-Plant Relationships*. Springer Netherlands, Dordrecht, pp. 177–188. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-009-1720-0_42

Hobbie, E.A., Ari, A.E., Ae, J., Trappe, J., 2005. Foliar and fungal ¹⁵N:¹⁴N ratios reflect development of mycorrhizae and nitrogen supply during primary succession: testing analytical models. *Oecologia* 146, 258–268. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00442-005-0208-z>

Hoetzel, S., Dupont, L., Schefuß, E., Rommerskirchen, F., Wefer, G., 2013. The role of fire in Miocene to Pliocene C₄ grassland and ecosystem evolution. *Nat. Geosci.* 6, 1027–1030. <https://doi.org/10.1038/ngeo1984>

Hofmann, D.J., Butler, J.H., Dlugokencky, E.J., Elkins, J.W., Masarie, K., Montzka, S.A., Tans, P., 2006. The role of carbon dioxide in climate forcing from 1979 to 2004: introduction of the Annual Greenhouse Gas Index. *Tellus* 58B, 614–619. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1600-0889.2006.00201.x>

Hogberg, P., 1997. ¹⁵N natural abundance in soil-plant systems. *New Phytol.* 137, 179–203. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.1997.00808.x>

Holopainen, J.K., 2004. Multiple functions of inducible plant volatiles. *Trends Plant Sci.* 9, 529–533. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.TPLANTS.2004.09.006>

Holopainen, J.K., Himanen, S.J., Yuan, J.S., Chen, F., Stewart, C.N., 2013. Ecological functions of terpenoids in changing climates, in: *Natural Products: Phytochemistry, Botany, and Metabolism of Alkaloids, Phenolics and Terpenes*. pp. 2913–2940.

https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-22144-6_129

- Johnson, N.C., Graham, J.H., Smith, F.A., 1997. Functioning of mycorrhizal associations along the mutualism-parasitism continuum. *New Phytologist* 135, 575–585.
- Karban, R., Baldwin, I.T., 2007. *Induced responses to herbivory*. University of Chicago Press.
- Keeley, J.E., Rundel, P.W., 2005. Fire and the Miocene expansion of C₄ grasslands. *Ecol. Lett.* 8, 683–690. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1461-0248.2005.00767.x>
- Keeling, C.D., 1979. The Suess Effect: ¹³Carbon-¹⁴Carbon Interrelations. *Environ. Int.* 2, 229–300. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0160-4120\(79\)90005-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/0160-4120(79)90005-9)
- Keeling, C.D., 1973. Industrial production of carbon dioxide from fossil fuels and limestone. <https://doi.org/10.3402/tellusa.v25i2.9652>
- Kesselmeier, J., Staudt, M., 1999. Biogenic Volatile Organic Compounds (VOC): An overview on emission, physiology and ecology. *J. Atmos. Chem.* 33, 23–88.
- Kiers, E.T., Duhamel, M., Beesetty, Y., Mensah, J.A., Franken, O., Verbruggen, E., Fellbaum, C.R., Kowalchuk, G.A., Hart, M.M., Bago, A., Palmer, M., West, S.A., Vandenkoornhuyse, P., Jansa, J., Bücking, H., 2011. Reciprocal rewards stabilize cooperation in the mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Science* 333, 880–882. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1208473>
- Krapp, A., 2015. Plant nitrogen assimilation and its regulation: a complex puzzle with missing pieces. *Plant Biol.* 25, 115–122. <https://doi.org/doi.org/10.1016/j.pbi.2015.05.010>
- Lambers, H., 1993. Rising CO₂, secondary plant metabolism, plant-herbivore interactions and litter decomposition theoretical considerations. *Vegetatio* 104/105, 263–271. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00048157>
- Lanfranco, L., Fiorilli, V., Gutjahr, C., 2018. Partner communication and role of nutrients in the arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis. *New Phytol.* 220, 1031–1046. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15230>
- Langenheim, J.H., 1994. Higher plant terpenoids: A phytocentric overview of their ecological roles. *J. Chem. Ecol.* 20, 1223–1280.
- Langenheim, J.H., 1990. Plant Resins. *Am. Sci.* 78, 16–24.
- Li, Y., Xu, J., Haq, N.U., Zhang, H., Zhu, X.-G., 2014. Was low CO₂ a driving force of C₄ evolution: *Arabidopsis* responses to long-term low CO₂ stress. *J. Exp. Bot.* 65, 3657–3667. <https://doi.org/10.1093/jxb/eru193>
- Lipp, J., Trimborn, P., Fritz, P., Moser, H., Becker, B., Frenzel, B., 1991. Stable isotopes

- in tree ring cellulose and climatic change. *Tellus B* 43, 322–330. <https://doi.org/10.1034/j.1600-0889.1991.t01-2-00005.x>
- Lipson, D., Nasholm, T., 2001. The unexpected versatility of plants: organic nitrogen use and availability in terrestrial ecosystems. *Oecologia* 128, 305–316. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420100693>
- Lovelock, C.E., Kyllö, D., Winter, K., 1996. Growth responses to vesicular-arbuscular mycorrhizae and elevated CO₂ in seedlings of a tropical tree, *Beilschmiedia pendula*. *Funct. Ecol.* 10, 662–667.
- Lüthi, D., Le Floch, M., Bereiter, B., Blunier, T., Barnola, J.-M., Siegenthaler, U., Raynaud, D., Jouzel, J., Fischer, H., Kawamura, K., Stocker, T.F., 2008. High-resolution carbon dioxide concentration record 650,000–800,000 years before present. *Nature* 453, 379–382. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature06949>
- Manum, S.B., Van Konijnenburg-Van Cittert, J.H.A., Wilde, V., 2000. *Tritaenia Maegdefrau et Rudolf*, Mesozoic ‘*Sciadopitys*-like’ leaves in mass accumulations. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 109, 255–269. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667\(99\)00058-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667(99)00058-5)
- Martin, D., Tholl, D., Gershenzon, J., Bohlmann, J., 2002. Methyl jasmonate induces traumatic resin ducts, terpenoid resin biosynthesis, and terpenoid accumulation in developing xylem of Norway spruce stems. *Plant Physiol.* 129, 1003–1018. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.011001>
- Maurino, V.G., Peterhansel, C., 2010. Photorespiration: Current status and approaches for metabolic engineering. *Curr. Opin. Plant Biol.* 13, 248–255. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.PBI.2010.01.006>
- Mazany, T., Lerman, J.C., Long, A., 1980. Carbon-13 in tree-ring cellulose as an indicator of past climates. *Nature* 287, 432–435. <https://doi.org/10.1038/287432a0>
- McCarroll, D., Loader, N.J., 2004. Stable isotopes in tree rings. *Quat. Sci. Rev.* 23, 771–801. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.quascirev.2003.06.017>
- McIntyre, S., Díaz, S., Lavorel, S., Cramer, W., 1999. Plant functional types and disturbance dynamics – Introduction. *J. Veg. Sci.* 10, 603–608. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1654-1103.1999.tb00103.x>
- Mengel, K., Kirkby, E.A., Kosegarten, H., Appel, T., 2001. Nitrogen, in: *Principles of Plant Nutrition*. Springer Netherlands, Dordrecht, pp. 397–434. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-010-1009-2_7
- Michener, R., Lajtha, K., 2007. *Stable isotopes in ecology and environmental science*, Second Edi. ed. Blackwell Publishing.
- Millar, A.H., Whelan, J., Soole, K.L., Day, D.A., 2011. Organization and regulation of

- mitochondrial respiration in plants. *Annu. Rev. Plant Biol.* 62, 79–104. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-arplant-042110-103857>
- Minagawa, M., Wada, E., 1984. Stepwise enrichment of ^{15}N along food chains: Further evidence and the relation between $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and animal age. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 48, 1135–1140. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037\(84\)90204-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037(84)90204-7)
- Mohan, J.E., Cowden, C.C., Baas, P., Dawadi, A., Frankson, P.T., Helmick, K., Hughes, E., Khan, S., Lang, A., Machmuller, M., Taylor, M., Witt, C.A., 2014. Mycorrhizal fungi mediation of terrestrial ecosystem responses to global change: Mini-review. *Fungal Ecol.* 10, 3–19. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.funeco.2014.01.005>
- Mohan, J.E., Ziska, L.H., Schlesinger, W.H., Thomas, R.B., Sicher, R.C., George, K., Clark, J.S., 2006. Biomass and toxicity responses of poison ivy (*Toxicodendron radicans*) to elevated atmospheric CO_2 . *PNAS* 103, 9086–9089. <https://doi.org/10.1890/06-1609.1>
- Monnin, E., Indermühle, A., Dällenbach, A., Flückiger, J., Stauffer, B., Stocker, T.F., Raynaud, D., Barnola, J.M., 2001. Atmospheric CO_2 concentrations over the last glacial termination. *Science* 291, 112–4. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.291.5501.112>
- Nacry, P., Bouguyon, E., Gojon, A., 2013. Nitrogen acquisition by roots: Physiological and developmental mechanisms ensuring plant adaptation to a fluctuating resource. *Plant Soil* 370, 1–29. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11104-013-1645-9>
- Noctor, G., Mhamdi, A., 2017. Climate change, CO_2 , and defense: The metabolic, redox, and signaling perspectives. *Trends Plant Sci.* 22, 857–870. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.tplants.2017.07.007>
- Novick, K.A., Katul, G.G., McCarthy, H.R., Oren, R., 2012. Increased resin flow in mature pine trees growing under elevated CO_2 and moderate soil fertility. *Tree Physiol.* 32, 752–763. <https://doi.org/10.1093/treephys/tpr133>
- Nunes-Nesi, A., Fernie, A.R., Stitt, M., 2010. Metabolic and signaling aspects underpinning the regulation of plant carbon nitrogen interactions. *Mol. Plant* 3, 973–996. <https://doi.org/10.1093/mp/ssq049>
- Pace, G M, Volk, R.J., Jackson, W. a, 1990. Nitrate reduction in response to CO_2 -limited photosynthesis : Relationship to carbohydrate supply and nitrate reductase activity in maize seedlings. *Plant Physiol.* 92, 286–92. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.92.2.286>
- Peñuelas, J., Azcon-Bieto, J., 1992. Changes in leaf $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of herbarium plant species during the last 3 centuries of CO_2 increase. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 15, 485–489. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-3040.1992.tb01000.x>
- Peñuelas, J., Estiarte, M., 1998. Can elevated CO_2 affect secondary metabolism and ecosystem function? *Tree* 13, 20–24. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347\(97\)01235-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(97)01235-)

- Peñuelas, J., Llusià, J., 2003. BVOCs: Plant defense against climate warming? *Trends Plant Sci.* 8, 105–109. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(03\)00008-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(03)00008-6)
- Peterhansel, C., Maurino, V.G., 2011. Photorespiration redesigned. *Plant Physiol.* 155, 49–55. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.110.165019>
- Petit, R.J., Raynaud, D., Basile, I., Chappellaz, J., Ritz, C., Delmotte, M., Legrand, M., Lorius, C., Pe, L., 1999. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature* 399, 429–413. <https://doi.org/10.1038/20859>
- Pichersky, E., Raguso, R.A., 2018. Why do plants produce so many terpenoid compounds? *New Phytol.* 220, 692–702. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14178>
- Plaxton, W.C., Podestá, F.E., 2006. The functional organization and control of plant respiration. *CRC Crit. Rev. Plant Sci.* 25, 159–198. <https://doi.org/10.1080/07352680600563876>
- Polley, H.W., Johnson, H.B., Marino, B.D., Mayeux, H.S., 1993. Increase in C_3 plant water-use efficiency and biomass over glacial to present CO_2 concentrations. *Nature* 361, 61–64. <https://doi.org/10.1038/361061a0>
- Porter, A.S., Yiotis, C., Montañ Ez, I.P., Mcelwain, J.C., 2017. Evolutionary differences in $\Delta^{13}C$ detected between spore and seed bearing plants following exposure to a range of atmospheric $O_2:CO_2$ ratios; implications for paleoatmosphere reconstruction. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 213, 517–533. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.gca.2017.07.007>
- Post, D.M., 2002. Using stable isotopes to estimate trophic position: Models, methods, and assumptions. *Ecology* 83, 703–718. [https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658\(2002\)083\[0703:USITET\]2.0.CO;2](https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658(2002)083[0703:USITET]2.0.CO;2)
- Querejeta, J.I., Allen, M.F., Caravaca, F., Roldán, A., 2006. Differential modulation of host plant $\delta^{13}C$ and $\delta^{18}O$ by native and nonnative arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi in a semiarid environment. *New Phytol.* 169, 379–387. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2005.01599.x>
- Querejeta, J.I., Barea, M.J., Allen, M.F., Caravaca, F., Roldán, A., 2003. Differential response of $\delta^{13}C$ and water use efficiency to arbuscular mycorrhizal infection in two aridland woody plant species. *Oecologia* 135, 510–515. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00442-003-1209-4>
- Rabinowitch, E.I., 1951. Photosynthesis and related processes, Vol. 72 No. ed. LWW.
- Rachmilevitch, S., Cousins, A.B., Bloom, A.J., 2004. Nitrate assimilation in plant shoots depends on photorespiration. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 101, 11506–11510

- Raupach, M.R., Marland, G., Ciais, P., Le Qué Ré, C., Canadell, J.G., Klepper, G., Field, C.B., 2007. Global and regional drivers of accelerating CO₂ emissions. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 104, 10288–10293
- Redecker, D., Kodner, R., Graham, L.E., 2000. Glomalean fungi from the Ordovician. *Science* 289, 1920–1. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.289.5486.1920>
- Rillig, M.C., Field, C.B., Allen, M.F., 1999. Soil biota responses to long-term atmospheric CO₂ enrichment in two California annual grasslands. *Oecologia* 119, 572–577
- Ripley, B.S., Cunniff, J., Osborne, C.P., 2013. Photosynthetic acclimation and resource use by the C₃ and C₄ subspecies of *Alloteropsis semialata* in low CO₂ atmospheres. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 19, 900–910. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.12091>
- Robertson, G.P., Vitousek, P.M., 2009. Nitrogen in agriculture: Balancing the cost of an essential resource. *Annu. Rev. Environ. Resour.* 34, 97–125. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.environ.032108.105046>
- Robinson, D., 2001. $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ as an integrator of the nitrogen. *Trends Ecol. Evol.* 16, 153–162. [https://doi.org/10.1016/s0169-5347\(00\)02098-x](https://doi.org/10.1016/s0169-5347(00)02098-x)
- Robinson, E.A., Ryan, G.D., Newman, J.A., 2012. A meta-analytical review of the effects of elevated CO₂ on plant-arthropod interactions highlights the importance of interacting environmental and biological variables. *New Phytol.* 194, 321–336. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2012.04074.x>
- Romero-Munar, A., Fernández Del-Saz, N., Ribas-Carbó, M., Flexas, J., Baraza, E., Florez-Sarasa, I., Fernie, A.R., Gulías, J., 2017. Arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis with *Arundo donax* decreases root respiration and increases both photosynthesis and plant biomass accumulation. *Plant. Cell Environ.* <https://doi.org/10.1111/pce.12902>
- Sage, R.F., 2004. The evolution of C₄ photosynthesis. *New Phytol.* 161, 341–370. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2004.00974.x>
- Sage, R.F., 1995. Was low atmospheric CO₂ during the Pleistocene a limiting factor for the origin of agriculture? *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 1, 93–106. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.1995.tb00009.x>
- Sage, R.F., Coleman, J.R., 2001. Effects of low atmospheric CO₂ on plants: More than a thing of the past. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 18–24. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(00\)01813-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(00)01813-6)
- Sage, Rowan F, Cowling, S.A., 1999. Implications of stress in low CO₂ atmospheres of the past: Are today's plants too conservative for a high CO₂ world?, in: Luo, Y., Mooney, H.A. (Eds.), *Carbon Dioxide and Environmental Stress*. Academic Press, San Diego, CA, USA, pp. 289–304.

- Sage, R.F., Kubien, D.S., 2007. The temperature response of C_3 and C_4 photosynthesis. *Plant. Cell Environ.* 30, 1086–1106. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365->
- Sharkey, T.D., 1985. Photosynthesis in Intact Leaves of C_3 Plants: Physics, Physiology and Rate Limitations. *Bot. Rev.* 51, 53–105.
- Sharp, Z., 2007. Principles of stable isotope geochemistry. Pearson/Prentice Hall, Upper Saddle River, NJ.
- Smith, S.E., Read, D., 2008. Mycorrhizal Symbiosis, in: Mycorrhizal Symbiosis Third Edition Introduction. Academic Press, Amsterdam, pp. 1–9
- Smith, N., Dukes, J., 2013. Plant respiration and photosynthesis in global-scale models: Incorporating acclimation to temperature and CO_2 . *Global Ch. Bio.* 19, 45–63. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.2012.02797.x>
- Spreitzer, R.J., Salvucci, M.E., 2002. Rubisco: Structure, regulatory interactions, and possibilities for a better enzyme. *Annu. Rev. Plant Biol.* 53, 449–75. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.arplant.53.100301.135233>
- Staudt, M., Joffre, R., Rambal, S., Kesselmir, J., 2001. Effect of elevated CO_2 on monoterpene emission of young *Quercus* trees and its relation to structural and ecophysiological parameters. *Tree Physiol.* 21, 437–445.
- Stevenson, F.J., Stevenson, E.J., Cole, M.A., 1999. Cycles of soils: Carbon, nitrogen, phosphorus, sulfur, micronutrients. John Wiley & Sons, Ltd.
- Stick, R. V., 2001. Carbohydrates: The sweet molecules of life. Elsevier.
- Taiz, L., Zeiger, E., 2010. Plant Physiology, Fifth ed. ed. Sinauer Associates Inc.
- Tang, J., Xu, L., Chen, X., Hu, S., 2009. Interaction between C_4 barnyard grass and C_3 upland rice under elevated CO_2 : Impact of mycorrhizae. *Acta Oecologica* 35, 227–235. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.ACTAO.2008.10.005>
- Tegeder, M., Masclaux-Daubresse, C., 2017. Source and sink mechanisms of nitrogen transport and use. *New Phytol.* <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14876>
- Temme, A.A., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2013. Meta-analysis reveals profound responses of plant traits to glacial CO_2 levels. *Ecol. Evol.* 3, 4525–4535. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.836>
- Temme, A.A., Liu, J.C., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2015. Winners always win: Growth of a wide range of plant species from low to future high CO_2 . *Ecol. Evol.* 5, 4949–4961. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.1687>
- Tissue, D., Griffin, K., Thomas, R., Strain, B., 1995. Effects of low and elevated CO_2 on C_3 and C_4 annuals -II. Photosynthesis and leaf biochemistry. *Oecologia* 101, 21–28.

- Tomlin, E.S., Borden, A.H., 1997. Thin bark and high density of outer resin ducts: interrelated resistance traits in Sitka spruce against the White Pine Weevil (Coleoptera: *Curculionidae*). *J. Econ. Entomol.* 90, 235–239.
- Treseder, K.K., 2004. A meta-analysis of mycorrhizal responses to nitrogen, phosphorus, and atmospheric CO₂ in field studies. *New Phytol.* 164, 347–355. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2004.01159.x>
- War, A.R., Paulraj, M.G., Ahmad, T., Buhroo, A.A., Hussain, B., Ignacimuthu, S., Sharma, H.C., 2012. Mechanisms of plant defense against insect herbivores. *Plant Signal. Behav.* 7, 1306–20. <https://doi.org/10.4161/psb.21663>
- Ward, J.K., Antonovics, J., Thomas, R.B., Strain, B.R., 2000. Is atmospheric CO₂ a selective agent on model C₃ annuals? *Oecologia* 123, 330–341. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420051019>
- Ward, J.K., Strain, B.R., 1997. Effects of low and elevated CO₂ partial pressure on growth and reproduction of *Arabidopsis thaliana* from different elevations. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 20, 254–260. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1997.d01-59.x>
- Wardle, D.A., 1992. A comparative assessment of factors which influence microbial biomass carbon and nitrogen levels in soil. *Biol. Rev.* 67, 321–358. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-185X.1992.tb00728.x>
- Wu, H., Hu, Z.-H., 1997. Comparative anatomy of resin ducts of the *Pinaceae*. *Trees* 11, 135–1143.
- Xu, G., Fan, X., Miller, A.J., 2012. Plant nitrogen assimilation and use efficiency. *Annu. Rev. Plant Biol* 63, 153–82. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-arplant-042811-105532>
- Yoneyama, T., Omata, T., Nakata, S., Yazaki, J., 1991. Fractionation of nitrogen isotopes during the uptake and assimilation of ammonia by plants. *Plant Cell Physiol.* 32, 1211–1217.
- Zangerl, A.R., Bazzaz, F.A., 1992. Theory and pattern in plant defense allocation, in: *Plant Resistance to Herbivores and Pathogens*. University of Chicago Press, Chicago, pp. 363–391.
- Zavala, J. a, Nability, P.D., Delucia, E.H., 2012. An emerging understanding of mechanisms governing insect herbivory under elevated CO₂. *Annu. Rev. Entomol.* 79–97. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-ento-120811-153544>
- Zelitch, I., Schultes, N.P., Peterson, R.B., Brown, P., Brutnell, T.P., 2009. High glycolate oxidase activity is required for survival of maize in normal air. *Plant Physiol.* 149, 195–204. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.108.128439>
- Zidianakis, G., Iliopoulos, G., Zelilidis, A., Kovar-Eder, J., 2016. *Pinus* remains from the Pitsidia plant assemblage document coastal pine forests in southern Crete during the

late Miocene. Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol. 235, 11–30.
<https://doi.org/10.1016/j.revpalbo.2016.09.003>

Chapter 2

2 Nitrogen fertilization influences low CO₂ effects on plant performance

2.1 Abstract

Low atmospheric CO₂ conditions prevailed for most of the recent evolutionary history of plants. While low CO₂ concentrations reduce plant growth compared to modern levels, low-CO₂ effects on plant performance may also be affected by nitrogen availability, since low leaf nitrogen decreases photosynthesis while CO₂ concentrations influence nitrogen assimilation. To investigate the influence of N availability on plant performance at low CO₂, I grew *Elymus canadensis* at ambient (~400 ppm) and sub-ambient (~180 ppm) CO₂ levels, under four N-treatments: *nitrate*-only; *ammonium*-only; a *full* and a *half* mix of nitrate and ammonium. Growth at low CO₂ decreased biomass in the *full* and *nitrate* treatments, but not in *ammonium* and *half* plants. Low CO₂ effects on photosynthetic and maximum electron transport rates were influenced by fertilization, with photosynthesis being most strongly impacted by low CO₂ in *full* plants. Low CO₂ reduced stomatal index in *half* plants, suggesting that the use of this indicator in paleo-inferences can be influenced by N availability. Under low CO₂ concentrations, *nitrate* plants discriminated more against ¹⁵N while *half* plants discriminated less against ¹⁵N compared to the *full* treatment, suggesting that N availability should be considered when using N isotopes as paleo-indicators.

2.2 Introduction

For most of their recent evolutionary history, plants have experienced atmospheric CO₂ concentrations far below the levels observed today. By the end of the Last Glacial

Maximum (~20 kyBP), CO₂ concentrations were as low as 180 ppm (Petit *et al.* 1999). The low CO₂ concentrations that prevailed for the last million years could have implications for modern plant physiology and ecosystem function, as plant traits that evolved in a low CO₂ world may influence plant responses to current, rapidly increasing CO₂ levels (Becklin *et al.* 2017; Gerhart and Ward 2010; Franks *et al.* 2013).

Growth at low CO₂ affects plant physiology and performance in numerous ways (Cowling and Sage, 1998; Gerhart and Ward, 2010; Sage and Cowling, 1999; Temme *et al.*, 2015). Growth at low CO₂ greatly decreases net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}) (Polley *et al.*, 1993; Sage, 1995; Tissue *et al.*, 1995) and biomass (Sage and Coleman, 2001; Temme *et al.*, 2015), and delays flowering time (Ward and Strain, 1997; Ward *et al.*, 2000). A meta-analysis by Temme *et al.* (2013) found that a 50 % reduction in CO₂ decreased A_{net} 38%, biomass 47 %, and water use efficiency 48 %. At low CO₂, A_{net} is reduced as Rubisco carboxylation rates are limited by substrate availability, while photorespiration rates increase, releasing previously fixed CO₂ (Ehleringer *et al.*, 2005). There is little evidence that photosynthetic capacity (*i.e.*, maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates, V_{cmax} , and maximum electron transport rates, J_{max}) is up-regulated under low CO₂ to enhance A_{net} , although few studies have investigated low CO₂ effects on these variables (but see Cunniff *et al.*, 2017; Ripley *et al.* 2013; Tissue *et al.* 1995). Instead, leaves developed at low CO₂ commonly have greater stomatal size, aperture and/or density (Elliott-Kingston *et al.*, 2016; Franks *et al.*, 2012; Temme *et al.*, 2013), which enhance CO₂ uptake. Despite these stomatal adjustments, reduced A_{net} at low CO₂ concentrations decrease plant productivity (Ehleringer *et al.* 2005; Temme *et al.* 2013; Cunniff *et al.* 2017).

Reductions in A_{net} and enhanced photorespiration in plants grown at low CO₂ decrease carbohydrate production and storage (Cowling and Sykes 1999), which can reduce the capacity to assimilate nutrients such as nitrogen (Sage and Coleman 2001). Nitrogen has been a limitation on terrestrial productivity on geological timescales (Canfield *et al.* 2010; Falkowski 1997), and is currently the most limiting nutrient for plant productivity in many terrestrial ecosystems. Nitrogen assimilation and C metabolism in plants are linked, since C-skeletons and reductants necessary for N transport and conversion depend

on photosynthetically-fixed C, and are therefore influenced by photosynthetic and photorespiratory rates (Bloom *et al.*, 2012, 2014; Busch *et al.*, 2018). For example, N assimilation can be almost completely halted under CO₂ deprivation (Pace *et al.*, 1990).

Soil inorganic nitrogen is commonly available to plants as NO₃⁻ or NH₄⁺ depending on soil properties, such as soil type, pH, and ion exchange capacity (Stevenson *et al.*, 1999; Wardle, 1992). In plants, NO₃⁻ is reduced to nitrite (NO₂⁻) by nitrate reductase using NADH, then converted to NH₄⁺ and finally to glutamine and glutamate (Foyer and Noctor, 2006). Levels of cytoplasmic NADH depend on photorespiration rates, since malate is exported during photorespiration from the chloroplast to the peroxisome, where it generates NADH (Rachmilevitch *et al.*, 2004). Photorespiration, which increases under low CO₂ conditions, can thereby enhance NO₃⁻ assimilation (Bloom *et al.*, 2010, 2014), while decreased photorespiration rates at elevated CO₂ reduce NO₃⁻ assimilation by decreasing reductant availability (Bloom *et al.*, 2014; Busch *et al.*, 2018). Hence, compared to current CO₂ levels, plants may perform proportionally better when supplied with NO₃⁻ than NH₄⁺ in a low CO₂ environment.

Plants are usually adapted to preferentially take up either NO₃⁻ or NH₄⁺ (Alt *et al.*, 2017; Dier *et al.*, 2017), reflecting the N form most available in their growth environment, although this preference can be altered by changes in growth CO₂ (BassiriRad *et al.* 1997). While changes in atmospheric CO₂ concentrations may not directly alter soil properties, soil-plant dynamics are likely to be affected by changes in CO₂ levels through effects on leaf carbon fluxes (namely photosynthesis, respiration, and photorespiration). Thus, past low CO₂ concentrations may have altered plant N dynamics, and consequently N cycling in ecosystems, in ways that are presently unknown.

One commonly used tool to investigate nitrogen cycling in plants and ecosystems is the analysis of the natural abundance of ¹⁵N relative to ¹⁴N ($\delta^{15}\text{N}$) (Robinson, 2001). Different N sources are taken up and assimilated through diverse mechanisms whose isotopic discrimination is mostly regulated by external N availability (Evans, 2001; Robinson 2001). The enzyme nitrate reductase, for instance, shows little discrimination against ¹⁵N, but as NO₃⁻ availability increases, so does discrimination against ¹⁵N

(Hogberg, 1997). Isotopic discrimination during NH_4^+ assimilation can occur as NH_4^+ is actively transported into roots cells, or through enzymatic activity (Evans, 2001; Yoneyama *et al.*, 1991). There are no data available, however, on how discrimination against ^{15}N may be shifted when plants must meet the C requirements for NO_3^- and NH_4^+ uptake and assimilation under low CO_2 , *i.e.*, C-limited, conditions.

To address these questions, I grew *Elymus canadensis* (Canada wild rye, Figure 2.1) at current and sub-ambient CO_2 conditions under four different N fertilization regimes. *Elymus canadensis* is a cool season perennial grass, and was selected because this genus is well recorded during the Last Glacial Maximum, and was likely an important resource for ancient humans (Perry and Quigg, 2011; Zazula *et al.*, 2006). Based on the premise that a low CO_2 environment may favor plants grown with NO_3^- over those grown with NH_4^+ , and that low CO_2 effects may be exacerbated by low N availability, we hypothesized that: 1) low CO_2 would reduce plant growth compared to current CO_2 , but growth reductions would be greatest when N availability was limited (*i.e.*, under low N or NH_4^+ -only treatments); 2) photosynthetic capacity (V_{cmax} and J_{max}) would be most strongly increased by low CO_2 in the full N and NO_3^- treatments, where there was sufficient N to allocate to photosynthetic proteins; 3) low CO_2 would increase stomatal index, an effect that would be greatest in treatments where low N constrains the ability to increase photosynthetic capacity, but where increasing intercellular CO_2 concentrations would increase A_{net} ; and 4) reduced N availability under low CO_2 would decrease discrimination against the heavier N isotope (^{15}N), resulting in a more positive N isotope composition.



Figure 2.1 *Elymus canadensis* plants used in this experiment.

2.3 Materials and methods

2.3.1 Experimental design and treatments

Two growth chambers (GCW15, Environmental Growth Chambers, Chagrin Falls, OH, USA), one for each CO₂ treatment, were maintained at 74 ± 5 % relative humidity, an irradiance of 300 ± 28 $\mu\text{mol photons m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, a 12.5-hour photoperiod, and 16 ± 0.1 °C (means \pm SE). While only one chamber per CO₂ treatment was used due to equipment constraints, environmental conditions were constantly monitored and regulated to maintain same chamber conditions for both CO₂ treatments. Average differences in relative humidity were 2 %, PAR differed by 2.35 $\mu\text{mol photons m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, and temperature by 0.19 °C between chambers. Photoperiod and temperatures emulated average growing season conditions of the last three years at the site where seeds were collected (Environment Canada, Midland WPCP Station). Each chamber contained a CO₂ control system consisting of an acrylic box filled with soda lime to absorb air CO₂, and fans attached to the boxes' lids. Fans were connected to a CO₂ analyzer (LI-820, LI-COR, Lincoln, NE, USA) coupled with a DIN process controller (Omega CN7633, Omega Engineering, Stamford, CT, USA). CO₂ concentrations averaged 401 ± 3 ppm in the ambient CO₂ chamber (AC), and 189 ± 12 ppm in the low CO₂ chamber (LC).

To minimize soil property influences on N availability, perlite was used as a growing medium. Perlite has been used previously in soilless experiments and does not affect mineralization rates in N supplementation experiments (Jasso-Chaverria *et al.*, 2005; Tyson *et al.*, 2007). Each chamber contained twenty 2 L pots planted with *E. canadensis* seeds (from Wildflower Farm, Coldwater, ON, Canada). Pots were then subdivided into four N treatments (n = 5 pots per CO₂ \times fertilizer treatment): a full-strength, NO₃⁻-only fertilizer (*nitrate*); a full-strength NH₄⁺-only fertilizer (*ammonium*); a full-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ mix fertilizer (*full*); and a half-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ mix fertilizer (*half*). The *full* treatment was a Hoagland's mix, while the *nitrate*, *ammonium* and *half* treatments were prepared by modifying the Hoagland's recipe (Hoagland and Arnon, 1950). Plants were watered three times per week and fertilized weekly: plants in the *nitrate*, *ammonium* and *full* treatments received 200 ml of water with 1.04 mol N/L, and plants in the *half*

treatment received 200 ml of water with 0.52 mol N/L. All other nutrients were similar across treatments, as was the fertilizer pH (6.58 ± 0.04). Pots were rotated weekly within each chamber to minimize intra-chamber effects.

2.3.2 Gas exchange measurements

Net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}) and stomatal conductance (g_s) were measured once seedlings were 90 days old, using a portable photosynthesis system (Walz GFS-3000, Effeltrich, Germany). Five seedlings per treatment were assessed. Two fully mature leaves were equilibrated for ~10 minutes at a CO₂ concentration of 400 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$. CO₂ concentrations were then changed to 300, 180, 100, 60, 400, 600, 800, 1000, 1200, 1500, and back to 400 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$. Leaves were maintained at each CO₂ level until a stable A_{net} was achieved. Cuvette conditions included a 16 °C leaf temperature, 750 $\mu\text{mol s}^{-1}$ flow rate (as recommended for the 3010-S cuvette of the Walz GFS-300), and an irradiance of 1200 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, which was light-saturating based on light-response curves (data not shown). After each measurement, leaves inside the cuvette were photographed and leaf area estimated using ImageJ 1.48v (Schneider *et al.*, 2012).

The response of A_{net} to intercellular CO₂ concentration (C_i) was used to derive photosynthetic capacity (Farquhar *et al.*, 1980). Values of V_{cmax} (maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates) and J_{max} (maximum electron transport rates) were parameterized in R 3.2.1 (R Core Team, 2013) using the package ‘*plantecophys*’ (Duursma 2015).

2.3.3 Biomass

After gas exchange, plants were harvested and subsamples of roots and shoots from five plants per treatment were collected and their area was estimated from digital images (ImageJ 1.48v - Schneider *et al.*, 2012). These tissues were dried at 60 °C to a constant mass, and weighed. The ratio of leaf area to leaf dry mass was used to calculate specific leaf area (SLA).

2.3.4 Stomatal index

Three mature leaves, including leaves used in the photosynthetic measurements, were sampled from five plants per treatment to obtain a negative mould. Dental resin (President SEM High Resolution Replication Kit, TED Pella INC., Essex, United Kingdom) was spread on a 3 cm x 1 cm area on both surfaces of each leaf. A positive mould was obtained by pushing the negative resin mould onto a layer of wet clear nail varnish on a microscope slide. Using the positive moulds, stomatal index (SI) was assessed at a magnification of 20x using an optical microscope (Nikon Eclipse Ci, Nikon, Melville, NY, USA), and calculated as:

$$\text{Stomatal Index} = \frac{\text{number of stomata}}{(\text{number of stomata} + \text{number of epidermal cells})}$$

Images were taken with a Nikon DS-Ri2 camera (Nikon, Melville, NY, USA) and analyzed using NIS Elements Documentation imaging software (Nikon).

2.3.5 Isotopes, C and N concentration

For measurements of $\delta^{15}\text{N}$, and C and N concentration, five mature leaves and a section containing entire roots (from the root crown to the tip) were harvested from each plant ($n = 5$), dried at 60 °C to constant mass, and ground. Isotopic abundance measurements were performed using a Delta^{Plus} isotope-ratio mass-spectrometer (Thermo Scientific, Bremen, Germany) coupled in continuous flow mode with an elemental analyzer (Costech Analytical Technologies, Valencia, CA, USA). Sample reproducibility was ± 0.14 ‰ for $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ (17 replicates), and ± 0.1 % gDW⁻¹ for %N (17 replicates). Sample reproducibility for [C] was ± 0.29 % gDW⁻¹ (11 replicates). A $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of $+6.37 \pm 0.1$ ‰ was obtained for 30 analyses of an internal keratin standard (accepted value = $+6.36$ ‰).

The nitrogen isotope composition of root, and leaves was reported using the standard delta notation ($\delta^{15}\text{N}$):

$$\delta^{15}\text{N} = \left(\frac{R_{\text{sample}} - R_{\text{standard}}}{R_{\text{standard}}} \right)$$

where R_{sample} was calibrated to AIR (R_{standard}) using international standards USGS40 and USGS41. We then compared changes in the isotope composition of leaves and roots between CO_2 treatments in each N treatment:

$$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf/root}} = \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}} - \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$$

where $\Delta^{15}\text{N}$ represents the difference found in either leaves ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) or roots ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$) between ambient ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}}$) and low CO_2 grown plants ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$).

2.3.6 Statistical analysis

Two-way ANOVAs were used to assess treatment effects of growth CO_2 , fertilizer, and their interaction on all parameters except for $\Delta^{15}\text{N}$ where a one-way ANOVA was used to estimate fertilization effects. Where treatment effects were significant ($p \leq 0.05$), Tukey's HSD tests were used to identify differences among treatments. Results are shown as means \pm standard error. Data analysis was performed in R 3.2.1 (R Core Team 2013).

2.4 Results

2.4.1 Biomass, SLA, [C] and [N]

LC reduced total biomass by 47 %, and decreased shoot and root biomass by 40 and 51 %, respectively, in comparison to AC (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.2). While there was no $\text{CO}_2 \times$ fertilizer interaction on shoot biomass, there was for total and root biomass (Table 2.1). At AC, root biomass was 44 % lower in *half* plants than in *full* plants, but at LC, there were no differences between N treatments in root mass. *Ammonium* plants had lower root and total biomass than *full* plants at AC, while *nitrate* plants were similar to *full* plants for shoot, root and total biomass in both CO_2 treatments. Within an N treatment, the decrease in growth in LC compared to AC was greatest for the *full* and *nitrate* plants, with less of a

growth impact of LC on the *ammonium* and *half* plants (Fig. 2.2). The root/shoot ratio of LC plants was 34 % lower than AC plants, indicating a shift towards relatively more shoot biomass at low CO₂. *Nitrate* plants had lower SLA than plants from the other N treatments (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.2). Leaf [C] was unaffected by growth CO₂, while growth at LC increased leaf and root [N] (Tables 2.1 and 2.2).

Table 2.1. Analysis of variance testing growth CO₂, fertilizer treatment, and their interaction on plant traits. Specific leaf area (SLA); carbon concentration ([C]); nitrogen concentration ([N]); net CO₂ assimilation rates at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and a common CO₂ of 400 ppm (A_{400}); maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates (V_{cmax}); maximum electron transport rates (J_{max}); stomatal conductance at growth CO₂ ($g_{\text{s-growth}}$) and a common CO₂ of 400 ppm ($g_{\text{s-400}}$); abaxial (SI_{abaxial}) and adaxial (SI_{adaxial}) stomatal index; and the difference between the isotope composition of leaves ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) or roots ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$) between ambient and low CO₂ plants. The p -values are shown with significant effects in bold ($p \leq 0.05$).

	ANOVA		
	CO ₂	Fertilizer	CO ₂ × Fertilizer
Total biomass	< 0.01	< 0.01	0.05
Shoot biomass	< 0.01	< 0.01	0.14
Root biomass	< 0.01	< 0.01	0.05
Root/shoot ratio	0.03	< 0.01	0.45
SLA	< 0.01	0.01	0.06
Leaf [C]	0.75	< 0.01	0.35
Root [C]	< 0.01	0.02	0.18
Leaf [N]	< 0.01	< 0.01	0.76
Root [N]	< 0.01	< 0.01	0.60
A_{growth}	< 0.01	< 0.01	< 0.01
A_{400}	0.11	< 0.01	0.01
V_{cmax}	0.67	< 0.01	0.35
J_{max}	0.18	< 0.01	0.04
$g_{\text{s-growth}}$	0.38	< 0.01	0.95
$g_{\text{s-400}}$	0.09	0.01	0.95
SI_{abaxial}	0.58	< 0.01	0.64
SI_{adaxial}	0.08	< 0.01	0.02
$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$		< 0.01	
$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$		< 0.01	

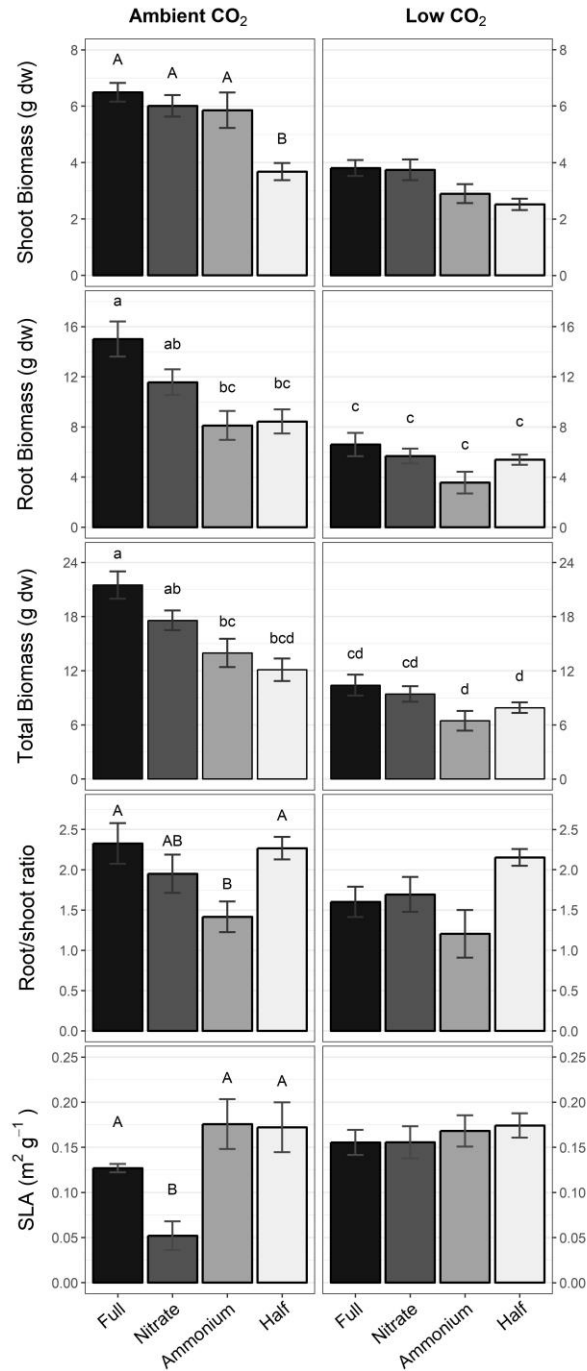


Figure 2.2. Plant biomass and specific leaf area (SLA). Shoot, root, and total dry biomass, root/shoot, and SLA of plants grown at ambient (left panels) and low CO₂ (right panels) in each fertilization treatment (*Full*, *Nitrate*, *Ammonium* and *Half*). Where the interaction term is significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO₂ data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, $n=5$.

Table 2.2. Carbon ([C]) and nitrogen ([N]) concentration in leaves and roots of plants grown at ambient (AC) and low CO₂ (LC) for each of the four nitrogen treatments: full-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Full*); full-strength, NO₃⁻-only fertilizer (*Nitrate*); full-strength NH₄⁺-only fertilizer (*Ammonium*); and half-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Half*). Upper-case letters (shown only on AC) represent the fertilizer treatment effects ($p \leq 0.05$), as there is no significant interaction term. Means \pm SE, n=5.

			[C] (% dry weight)	[N] (% dry weight)
Leaf	AC	<i>Full</i>	41.87 \pm 0.23 ^A	3.09 \pm 0.07 ^A
		<i>Nitrate</i>	42.16 \pm 0.33 ^A	3.92 \pm 0.06 ^A
		<i>Ammonium</i>	42.81 \pm 0.21 ^A	3.85 \pm 0.37 ^A
		<i>Half</i>	41.57 \pm 0.21 ^B	2.96 \pm 0.15 ^B
	LC	<i>Full</i>	42.33 \pm 0.19	3.84 \pm 0.16
		<i>Nitrate</i>	42.26 \pm 0.16	4.65 \pm 0.25
		<i>Ammonium</i>	41.47 \pm 0.92	4.99 \pm 0.32
		<i>Half</i>	41.07 \pm 0.32	3.58 \pm 0.15
Root	AC	<i>Full</i>	40.90 \pm 0.05 ^A	0.72 \pm 0.02 ^B
		<i>Nitrate</i>	40.44 \pm 0.52 ^{AB}	0.85 \pm 0.05 ^{AB}
		<i>Ammonium</i>	39.57 \pm 0.39 ^B	1.08 \pm 0.16 ^A
		<i>Half</i>	39.48 \pm 0.27 ^B	0.67 \pm 0.03 ^B
	LC	<i>Full</i>	39.65 \pm 0.12	0.86 \pm 0.06
		<i>Nitrate</i>	39.45 \pm 0.18	1.24 \pm 0.11
		<i>Ammonium</i>	39.11 \pm 0.19	1.64 \pm 0.34
		<i>Half</i>	39.51 \pm 0.31	0.91 \pm 0.03

2.4.2 Photosynthetic parameters

The A_{net} measured at growth CO_2 (A_{growth}) in *full* plants was 46 % lower in LC than AC plants, but there was no reduction in A_{growth} in LC compared to AC in the other N treatments (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.3). When A_{net} was measured at 400 ppm CO_2 (A_{400}), rates were highest in *full* plants at AC, but similar between *full* and *nitrate* plants in LC. *Ammonium* plants at LC had similar A_{400} as *full* and *nitrate* plants, but also similar A_{400} as *half* plants. V_{cmax} was unaffected by growth CO_2 (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.3). The V_{cmax} values in *full* and *nitrate* plants were twice that of *ammonium* and *half* plants. In contrast, J_{max} was affected by fertilization and a $\text{CO}_2 \times$ fertilizer interaction (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.3). In AC, *full* plants had the highest J_{max} values, which were similar to those of the *nitrate* plants, but higher than those of *ammonium* and *half* plants. In LC, both *full* and *nitrate* plants had higher J_{max} values than *ammonium* and *half* plants.

2.4.3 Stomatal conductance and index

Both stomatal conductance measured at growth CO_2 ($g_{\text{s-growth}}$) and at 400 ppm CO_2 ($g_{\text{s-400}}$) varied with fertilization, but was unaffected by growth CO_2 (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.4), with the lowest values in *ammonium* plants. The stomatal index of the abaxial and adaxial sides of leaves ($\text{SI}_{\text{abaxial}}$ and $\text{SI}_{\text{adaxial}}$) was unaffected by growth CO_2 (Table 2.1; Fig. 2.4), but there was a growth $\text{CO}_2 \times$ fertilizer interaction on $\text{SI}_{\text{adaxial}}$, which in *half* leaves was 23 % higher in AC compared to LC leaves.

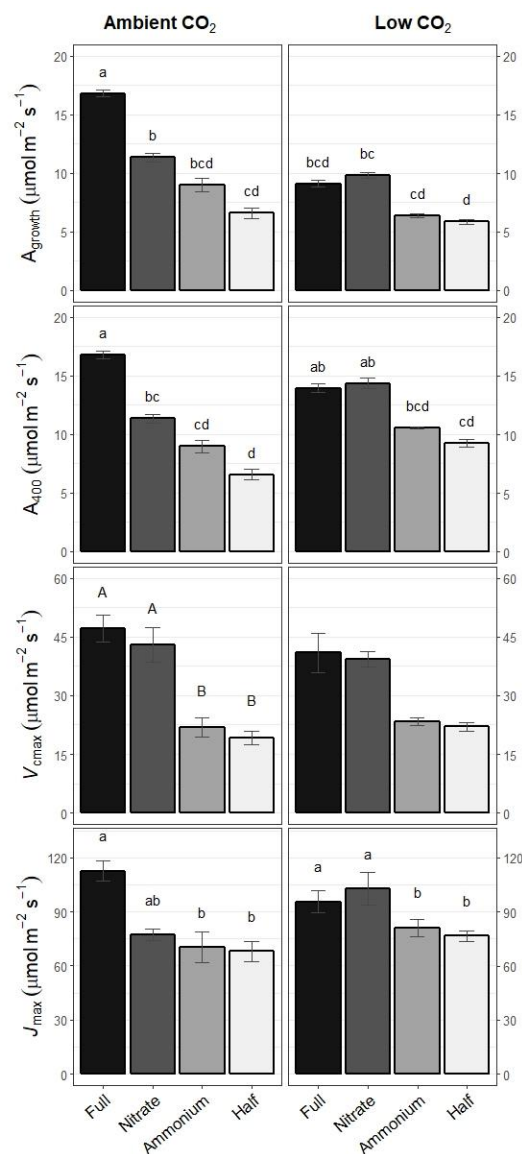


Figure 2.3. Net CO₂ assimilation (A_{net}), maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) rates. A_{net} measured at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and a common CO₂ concentration of 400 ppm (A_{400}) of plants grown at ambient (left panels) and low CO₂ (right panels) in each fertilization treatment (*Full*, *Nitrate*, *Ammonium* and *Half*). Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO₂ data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, $n=5$.

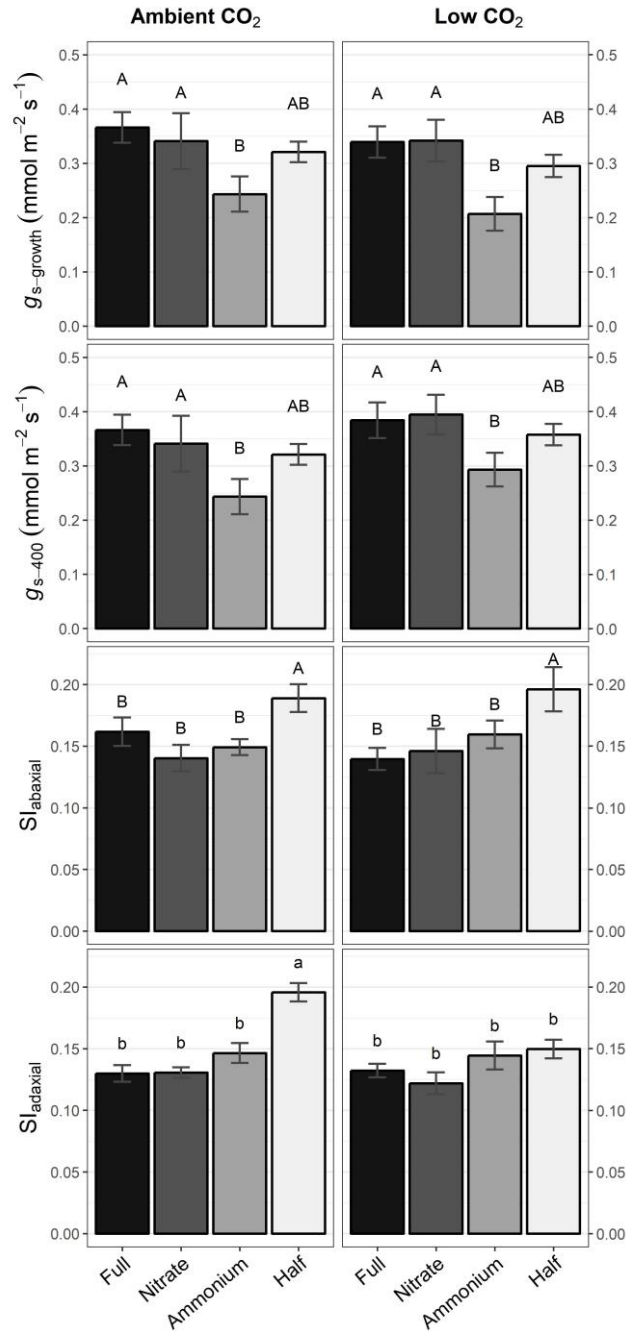


Figure 2.4. Stomatal conductance measured at growth CO₂ ($g_{s\text{-growth}}$) and a common CO₂ concentration of 400 ppm ($g_{s\text{-400}}$), and stomatal index measured on the abaxial (SI_{abaxial}) and adaxial (SI_{adaxial}) sides of the leaves. Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on ambient CO₂ data) represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, $n=5$.

Nitrogen isotopes

Leaves fertilized with NO_3^- -only were more depleted of ^{15}N at LC compared to AC, while leaves of *half* plants were enriched in ^{15}N at LC compared to AC (Tables 2.1 and 2.3). Values of $\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$ also varied with CO_2 and fertilization, but there was no interaction (Table 2.1). Except for the *half* treatment, where $\Delta^{15}\text{N}$ was similar between the CO_2 treatments, roots were depleted of ^{15}N at LC relative to AC.

Table 2.3. Difference in nitrogen isotope composition of leaves and roots between plants grown at ambient and low CO₂ for each nitrogen treatment: full-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Full*); full-strength, NO₃⁻-only fertilizer (*Nitrate*); full-strength NH₄⁺-only fertilizer (*Ammonium*); and half-strength NO₃⁻/NH₄⁺ fertilizer (*Half*). $\Delta^{15}\text{N}$ is calculated as the difference in nitrogen isotope composition between ambient and low CO₂-grown plants ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{AC}} - \delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{LC}}$) for leaves ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$). Where the interaction term was significant ($p < 0.05$), differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters represent differences between fertilizers when there is no significant interaction. Means \pm SE, n = 5.

	$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$	$\Delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$
<i>Full</i>	$-0.10 \pm 0.19^{\text{BC}}$	$0.54 \pm 0.22^{\text{A}}$
<i>Nitrate</i>	$1.18 \pm 0.19^{\text{A}}$	$0.27 \pm 0.22^{\text{AB}}$
<i>Ammonium</i>	$0.27 \pm 0.18^{\text{AB}}$	$0.77 \pm 0.15^{\text{A}}$
<i>Half</i>	$-0.79 \pm 0.26^{\text{C}}$	$-0.10 \pm 0.29^{\text{B}}$

2.5 Discussion

I hypothesized that growth at low CO₂ combined with NH₄⁺-only or low N fertilization would decrease plant growth, photosynthetic capacity, and discrimination against ¹⁵N, while increasing stomatal index, when compared to low CO₂ plants given a full-strength NH₄⁺-NO₃⁻ or NO₃⁻-only fertilizer. While the results are more complex than my hypotheses, I did find that the effect of low CO₂ on many plant traits was altered by the source or quantity of N available.

2.5.1 Decrease in growth at low CO₂

The results do not support my first hypothesis that growth in *ammonium* and *half* plants would be reduced more strongly by LC than *full* or *nitrate* plants. Instead, plants that had the lowest growth in AC (*ammonium* and *half*) had only relatively small decreases in total biomass between AC and LC conditions, while *full* plants had a 51 % decrease in growth. This implies that low N availability constrains the growth response to a 220 ppm rise in CO₂ concentration. While there is a large body of work showing that low N availability limits plant responses to high CO₂ (*e.g.*, LeBauer and Treseder, 2008; Norby *et al.*, 2010; Reich *et al.*, 2006), to our knowledge, this is the first work to show that low N conditions also limit plant growth responses to changes in CO₂ levels that occurred over the past 20,000 years.

Compared to AC plants, LC plants had higher leaf [N], which commonly reflects greater investment in photosynthetic machinery to enhance C uptake (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004). As noted below, however, there was little evidence that higher [N] in LC plants was used to increase photosynthetic capacity. Examining how the N treatments affected growth within a CO₂ treatment allows us to establish the direct impact of changes in N source and amount on plant traits. Unsurprisingly, *half* plants had lower growth than *full* plants at AC. We can also compare the growth of *nitrate* and *ammonium* plants to *full* plants, which were the control fertilizer treatment. In AC, *nitrate* plants were similar to the *full* treatment in shoot, root and total biomass, as well as root/shoot ratio, while *ammonium*

plants had lower root and total biomass than *full* plants, and a lower root/shoot ratio. Since perlite was chosen to minimize changes in N availability due to physical and chemical properties of the growing media, taken together, these results indicate that *E. canadensis* is likely a nitrate-preferring species. But, although this was true at AC, there was little evidence of an N source preference at LC. At LC, shoot and total biomass was similar across all four N treatments, and while *ammonium* plants had a lower root/shoot ratio than the *full* plants, their root/shoot was similar to that of the *nitrate* plants. Thus, carbon limitation was a stronger determinant than N source for plant growth. Overall, plants responded to C limitation by increasing allocation to shoots and reducing leaf thickness or density (*i.e.*, increasing SLA), regardless of fertilization regime.

2.5.2 Reductions in photosynthetic performance at low CO₂ depend on N availability

I hypothesized that LC plants would up-regulate V_{cmax} and J_{max} , with the strongest up-regulation in the *full* and *nitrate* treatments. But growth CO₂ did not affect V_{cmax} or J_{max} . Instead, V_{cmax} varied with fertilization, with *full* and *nitrate* plants having higher V_{cmax} than the *ammonium* and *half* plants. Values of J_{max} in *full* and *nitrate* plants were also higher than those of *ammonium* and *half* plants at LC, although *nitrate* plants had similar J_{max} values to the other N treatments in AC. The availability of N therefore appears to have been a stronger determinant of photosynthetic capacity than CO₂ availability. Differences in V_{cmax} and J_{max} , however, are not correlated with leaf [N] *per se*: while *ammonium* and *half* plants both had equally low photosynthetic capacity, *ammonium* plants had higher leaf [N] than *half* plants, with leaf [N] similar to the *full* and *nitrate* leaves that had high V_{cmax} and J_{max} . Although the down-regulation response of V_{cmax} to high CO₂ is well known (Ellsworth *et al.*, 2004; Griffin *et al.*, 2000; Tissue *et al.*, 1999), it is still hard to generalize how low CO₂ impacts photosynthetic capacity. Tissue *et al.* (1995) found that V_{cmax} was 23% lower in *Abutilon theophrasti* grown at low CO₂ than at current CO₂, a result linked to decreased Rubisco content and activation state. Ripley *et al.* (2013) observed an up-regulation of photosynthetic capacity in C₃ species grown at

~180 ppm CO₂, which was linked to increased leaf [N]. Future low CO₂ studies should therefore work to enhance our understanding of photosynthetic physiology in C-limited conditions.

Considering how N source and availability influenced V_{cmax} and J_{max} , it is not surprising that A_{growth} , and its response to LC, also varied with fertilization. I observed a strong decline in A_{growth} in LC compared to AC in *full* plants (85 %), but there was no reduction in A_{growth} under LC in the other N treatments. The lack of a change in A_{growth} between AC and LC in the *nitrate*, *ammonium* and *half* treatments implies that plants either experienced N limitations for synthesizing photosynthetic enzymes and pigments, or that nutrient availability limited growth potential, which in turn reduced photosynthesis (Fatichi *et al.*, 2014). Given that LC actually increased leaf [N] and had no effect on V_{cmax} (and only a minor impact on J_{max}), the data support the growth limitation hypothesis, indicating that low N availability can constrain growth and photosynthetic responses to low and current CO₂ conditions. Most studies on the effects of low CO₂ on plants (reviewed in Gerhart and Ward, 2010; Temme *et al.*, 2013) do not consider that plant growth is often limited by N availability in the field (LeBauer and Treseder, 2008). Based on these results, examinations of plant responses to changing CO₂ in the geologic past should consider the influence of nutrient limitations, rather than being conducted under N-replete conditions.

There was no increase in g_s from either long-term anatomical shifts or short-term stomatal behavior to help mitigate the low C availability at LC. The SI was similar in most N treatments, and g_s was unresponsive to growth CO₂ concentrations across N treatments. While plants grown at LC can increase g_s to enhance CO₂ uptake (Pinto *et al.*, 2014; Ripley *et al.*, 2013), no change in g_s was observed between AC and LC plants. Given that water loss increases as g_s increases, *E. canadensis* may be forgoing enhanced CO₂ uptake to prevent excess water loss.

2.5.3 SI_{adaxial} decreased at low CO_2 when N was limiting

Contrary to my third hypothesis, growth at low CO_2 did not increase SI. Although the relationship between SI and growth CO_2 concentration is generally inverse (Beerling and Royer, 2002), changes in SI in response to growth CO_2 can be highly variable. In historical collections, Beerling (2005) found a decrease in SI as CO_2 rose from 280 to 360 ppm, but SI increased proportionally to growth CO_2 in *Solanum dimidiatum* grown between 200 to 550 ppm CO_2 (Maherali *et al.*, 2002). While reviewing SI values published for 176 C_3 species, Royer (2001) observed that SI was inversely correlated to CO_2 concentrations in only 36 % but in 94 % of experimental and fossil studies, respectively. This variety of responses indicates that growth CO_2 effects on SI from experimental manipulations with current genotypes may not be very reliable for predicting SI responses to CO_2 on evolutionary scales, a common concern in low CO_2 studies (Ward and Strain, 1997). While environmental conditions such as irradiance, temperature and humidity are possible confounding factors when using SI to infer growth CO_2 (Royer, 2001), the results indicate that N availability can also influence SI. I found that SI was similar between AC and LC plants except when plants were N-limited (*i.e.*, *half* plants). The reduction in SI in plants under C- and N-limitation may be related to the observation that *half* plants also had low A_{growth} and V_{cmax} . In this case, the benefit from enhanced CO_2 influx through stomata may not outweigh potential increases in water loss, given that photosynthetic capacity was low.

2.5.4 C and N availability regulates N isotopic discrimination

Roots of LC plants discriminated more against ^{15}N when compared to AC, which may be a direct effect of reduced root biomass in LC plants. As LC had reduced root growth in comparison to AC plants, their N requirement would be reduced and more readily met by preferentially using the lighter isotope from the available N pool.

In leaves, NO_3^- fertilization caused a depletion of ^{15}N in LC plants compared to AC plants (1.2 ‰), while this difference was much smaller when the only N source was NH_4^+ (0.3 ‰). NO_3^- can be assimilated in both roots and shoots, while NH_4^+ is mostly assimilated in roots (Hachiya and Sakakibara 2016). Thus, plants fertilized with only NO_3^- are more depleted of ^{15}N compared to NH_4^+ -fed plants since NO_3^- available for assimilation in leaves can originate from a NO_3^- pool that was previously exposed to assimilation in the roots (Evans *et al.*, 1996). In addition, the enzymes involved in the initial steps of NO_3^- assimilation discriminate against the heavier N isotope (Tcherkez and Farquhar 2006); growth at LC, where C availability (and consequently energy) was limited, increased this discrimination. Thus, the preference for the lighter N isotope in LC *nitrate* plants was probably the result of reduced N requirements for metabolism. In contrast, growth at LC decreased discrimination against ^{15}N in leaves of *half* plants, in agreement with our fourth hypothesis. N assimilation processes should discriminate less against the heavier N isotope when N availability is low (Evans, 2001), since plants must enhance N uptake from a limited external N pool. Hence, as *half* plants were already C-limited, N-limitation further decreased the discrimination against ^{15}N .

Given the diversity of N sources available to plants and the variability in N availability on temporal and spatial scales (Canfield *et al.*, 2010; LeBauer and Treseder, 2008), interpretations of the N isotope composition of plant tissues should consider factors influencing the origin of assimilated N. Information on soil properties and environmental conditions could represent a starting point to derive the major N transformations (*e.g.*, mineralization, nitrification) determining possible N forms that are most bioavailable (Amundson *et al.*, 2003; Weil and Brady 2016). Integrating potential N sources into studies of plant N isotope signals not only provides a more holistic view of plant N cycling, but could also help interpret paleoecology inferences based on N isotope signals, such as reconstruction of past trophic interactions. Plant $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ is used in paleobiology studies to identify animal diet and trophic position (Boecklen *et al.*, 2011), as the N isotope signature in consumer bulk collagen usually reflects the isotope composition of the plants consumed at the base of the food web (Garten *et al.*, 2008). An enrichment of 3.4 ‰ in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ is commonly considered to be the standard difference between trophic levels (Minagawa and Wada, 1984; Post, 2002). Our results show a 2 ‰ difference

between leaves of *nitrate* and *half* plants, a difference that could potentially skew the interpretation of $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in paleo-animal tissues if the vegetation at the base of the food web came from plants that were either N-limited or had only NO_3^- available.

2.5.5 NO_3^- vs NH_4^+ as N sources at low CO_2

While we were unable to measure photorespiration directly, photorespiration rates increase at low CO_2 concentrations (Ehleringer *et al.*, 2005; Farquhar and von Caemmerer, 1982) and can provide reductant for nitrate conversion (Bloom *et al.*, 2010, 2014). In our study, *nitrate* plants had higher photosynthetic capacity and stomatal conductance than *ammonium* plants, which allowed total biomass of *nitrate* plants to be closer to *full* than *ammonium* plants, while *ammonium* plants were mostly similar to the *half* treatment. While studies covering a wider range of NO_3^- and NH_4^+ -preferring species are needed, our observations are consistent with the hypothesis that in the low CO_2 period before the Industrial Revolution, where CO_2 concentrations were 180-270 ppm (Petit *et al.*, 1999; Monnin *et al.*, 2001), NO_3^- -preferring species such as *E. canadensis* may have had some advantage over species preferentially using NH_4^+ . Such observations complement those from elevated CO_2 studies where plants performed better with NH_4^+ than NO_3^- , highlighting that the ability to use NO_3^- or NH_4^+ is likely to change in a high CO_2 future (Bloom *et al.*, 2010, 2012; Cheng *et al.*, 2012).

2.6 References

- Alt, D.S., Doyle, J.W., Malladi, A., 2017. Nitrogen-source preference in blueberry (*Vaccinium sp.*): Enhanced shoot nitrogen assimilation in response to direct supply of nitrate. *J. Plant Physiol.* 216, 79–87. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jplph.2017.05.014>
- Amundson, R., Austin, A.T., Schuur, E.A.G., Yoo, K., Matzek, V., Kendall, C., Uebersax, A., Brenner, D., Baisden, W.T., 2003. Global patterns of the isotopic composition of soil and plant nitrogen. *Global Biogeochem. Cycles* 17. <https://doi.org/10.1029/2002GB001903>

- BassiriRad, H., Griffin, K.L., Reynolds, J.F., Strain, B.R., 1997. Changes in root NH_4^+ and NO_3^- absorption rates of loblolly and ponderosa pine in response to CO_2 enrichment. *Plant Soil* 190, 1–9. <https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1004206624311>
- Becklin, K.M., Walker, S.M., Way, D.A., Ward, J.K., 2017. CO_2 studies remain key to understanding a future world. *New Phytol.* 214, 34–40. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14336>
- Beerling, D.J., 2005. Evolutionary responses of land plants to atmospheric CO_2 , in: *A History of Atmospheric CO_2 and Its Effects on Plants, Animals, and Ecosystems*. Springer, pp. 114–132.
- Beerling, D.J., Royer, D.L., 2002. Reading a CO_2 signal from fossil stomata. *New Phytol.* 153, 387–397. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.0028-646X.2001.00335.x>
- Bloom, A.J., Asensio, J.S.R., Randall, L., Rachmilevitch, S., Cousins, A.B., Carlisle, E.A., 2012. CO_2 enrichment inhibits shoot nitrate assimilation in C_3 but not C_4 plants and slows growth under nitrate in C_3 plants. *Ecology* 93, 355–367. <https://doi.org/10.1890/11-0485.1>
- Bloom, A. J., Burger, M., Asensio, J.S.R., Cousins, A.B., Zhou, L., Shew, H.D., Rufty, T.W., Hu, S., 2010. Carbon dioxide enrichment inhibits nitrate assimilation in wheat and Arabidopsis. *Science*. 328, 899–903. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1186440>
- Bloom, A.J., Burger, M., Kimball, B., Jr, P.P., 2014. Nitrate assimilation is inhibited by elevated CO_2 in field-grown wheat. *Nat. Clim. Chang.* 4, 477–180. <https://doi.org/10.1038/NCLIMATE2183>
- Boecklen, W.J., Yarnes, C.T., Cook, B.A., James, A.C., 2011. On the use of stable isotopes in trophic ecology. *Annu. Rev. Ecol. Evol. Syst.* 42, 411–440. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-ecolsys-102209-144726>
- Busch, F.A., Sage, R.F., Farquhar, G.D., 2018. Plants increase CO_2 uptake by assimilating nitrogen via the photorespiratory pathway. *Nat. Plants* 4, 46–54. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41477-017-0065-x>
- Canfield, D.E., Glazer, A.N., Falkowski, P.G., 2010. The evolution and future of Earth's nitrogen cycle. *Science*. 330, 192–196. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1186120>
- Cheng, L., Booker, F.L., Tu, C., Burkey, K.O., Zhou, L., Shew, H.D., Rufty, T.W., Hu, S., 2012. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi increase organic carbon decomposition under elevated CO_2 . *Science*. 337, 1084–1087. <https://doi.org/10.5061/dryad.b7f53>
- Cowling, S. a, Sykes, M.T., 1999. Physiological significance of low atmospheric CO_2 for plant–climate interactions. *Quat. Res.* 52, 237–242. <https://doi.org/10.1006/qres.1999.2065>
- Cowling, S. A., Sage, R.F., 1998. Interactive effects of low atmospheric CO_2 and

- elevated temperature on growth, photosynthesis and respiration in *Phaseolus vulgaris*. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 21, 427–435. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00290.x>
- Cunniff, J., Jones, G., Charles, M., Osborne, C.P., 2017. Yield responses of wild C_3 and C_4 crop progenitors to subambient CO_2 : A test for the role of CO_2 limitation in the origin of agriculture. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 23, 380–393. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13473>
- Dier, M., Meinen, R., Erbs, M., Kollhorst, L., Baillie, C.-K., Kaufholdt, D., Kücke, M., Weigel, H.-J., Zörb, C., Hänsch, R., Manderscheid, R., 2017. Effects of Free Air Carbon Dioxide Enrichment (FACE) on nitrogen assimilation and growth of winter wheat under nitrate and ammonium fertilization. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 24, e40-e54. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13819>
- Duursma, R.A., 2015. Plantecophys - An R package for analysing and modelling leaf gas exchange data. *PLoS One* 10, e0143346. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0143346>
- Ehleringer, J.R., Cerling, T.E., Dearing, M.D., 2005. *A History of atmospheric CO_2 and its effects on plants, animals, and ecosystems*, 1st ed. Springer, Salt Lake City, UT, USA.
- Elliott-Kingston, C., Haworth, M., Yearsley, J.M., Batke, S.P., Lawson, T., McElwain, J.C., 2016. Does size matter? Atmospheric CO_2 may be a stronger driver of stomatal closing rate than stomatal size in taxa that diversified under low CO_2 . *Front. Plant Sci.* 7, 1253. <https://doi.org/10.3389/fpls.2016.01253>
- Ellsworth, D.S., Reich, P.B., Naumburg, E.S., Koch, G.W., Kubiske, M.E., Smith, S.D., 2004. Photosynthesis, carboxylation and leaf nitrogen responses of 16 species to elevated pCO_2 across four free-air CO_2 enrichment experiments in forest, grassland and desert. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 10, 2121–2138. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.2004.00867.x>
- Evans, R.D., 2001. Physiological mechanisms influencing plant nitrogen isotope composition. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 121–126. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(01\)01889-1](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(01)01889-1)
- Evans, R.D., Bloom, A.J., Sukrapanna, S.S., Ehleringer, J.R., 1996. Nitrogen isotope composition of tomato (*Lycopersicon esculentum* Mill. cv. T-5) grown under ammonium or nitrate nutrition. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 19, 1317–1323. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-3040.1996.tb00010.x>
- Falkowski, P.G., 1997. Evolution of the nitrogen cycle and its influence on the biological sequestration of CO_2 in the ocean. *Nature* 387, 272–274. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature02381.1>
- Farquhar, G., O’Leary, M., Berry, J., 1982. On the relationship between carbon isotope

- discrimination and the intercellular carbon dioxide concentration in leaves. *Aust. J. Plant Physiol.* 9, 121. <https://doi.org/10.1071/PP9820121>
- Farquhar, G.D., von Caemmerer, S., Berry, J.A., 1980. A biochemical model of photosynthetic CO₂ assimilation in leaves of C₃ species. *Planta* 149, 78–90. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00386231>
- Fatichi, S., Leuzinger, S., Körner, C., 2014. Moving beyond photosynthesis: from carbon source to sink-driven vegetation modeling. *New Phytol.* 201, 1086–1095. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.12614>
- Fogel, R., 1988. Interactions among soil biota in coniferous ecosystems. *Agric. Ecosyst. Environ.* 24, 69–85. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8809\(88\)90057-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8809(88)90057-6)
- Foyer, C.H., Noctor, G., 2006. Photosynthetic nitrogen assimilation and associated carbon and respiratory metabolism, Vol. 12. ed. Springer Science & Business Media.
- Franks, P.J., Adams, M.A., Amthor, J.S., Barbour, M.M., Berry, J.A., Ellsworth, D.S., Farquhar, G.D., Ghannoum, O., Lloyd, J., McDowell, N., Norby, R.J., Tissue, D.T., von Caemmerer, S., 2013. Sensitivity of plants to changing atmospheric CO₂ concentration: From the geological past to the next century. *New Phytol.* 197, 1077–1094. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.12104>
- Franks, P.J., Leitch, I.J., Ruzsala, E.M., Hetherington, A.M., Beerling, D.J., 2012. Physiological framework for adaptation of stomata to CO₂ from glacial to future concentrations. *Philos. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. B. Biol. Sci.* 367, 537–546. <https://doi.org/10.1098/rstb.2011.0270>
- Garten, C.T., Hanson, P.J., Todd, D.E., Lu, B.B., Brice, D.J., 2008. Natural ¹⁵N- and ¹³C-abundance as indicators of forest nitrogen status and soil carbon dynamics, *Stable Isotopes in Ecology and Environmental Science: Second Edition*. <https://doi.org/10.1002/9780470691854.ch3>
- Gavito, M.E., Jakobsen, I., Mikkelsen, T.N., Mora, F., 2019. Direct evidence for modulation of photosynthesis by an arbuscular mycorrhiza-induced carbon sink strength. *New Phytol.* *nph.15806*. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15806>
- Gerhart, L.M., Ward, J.K., 2010. Plant responses to low [CO₂] of the past. *New Phytol.* 188, 674–695. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2010.03441.x>
- Griffin, K.L., Tissue, D.T., Turnbull, M.H., Whitehead, D., 2000. The onset of photosynthetic acclimation to elevated CO₂ partial pressure in field-grown *Pinus radiata* D. Don. after 4 years. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 23, 1089–1098. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.2000.00622.x>
- Hachiya, T., Sakakibara, H., 2016. Interactions between nitrate and ammonium in their uptake, allocation, assimilation, and signaling in plants. *J. Exp. Bot.* 68, erw449.

<https://doi.org/10.1093/jxb/erw449>

- Hoagland, D.R., Arnon, D.I., 1950. The water-culture method for growing plants without soil, 2nd edit. ed. Circular. California agricultural experiment stations.
- Hogberg, P., 1997. ^{15}N natural abundance in soil-plant systems. *New Phytol.* 137, 179–203. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.1997.00808.x>
- Jasso-Chaverria, C., Hochmuth, G.J., Hochmuth, R.C., Sargent, S.A., 2005. Fruit yield, size and color responses of two greenhouse cucumber types to nitrogen fertilization in perlite soilless culture. *Horttechnology* 15, 565–571.
- LeBauer, David S., Treseder, K.K., 2008. Nitrogen limitation of net primary productivity in terrestrial ecosystems is globally distributed. *Ecology* 89, 371–379. <https://doi.org/10.1890/06-2057.1>
- Maherali, H., Oberle, B., Stevens, P.F., Cornwell, W.K., Mcglinn, D.J., 2016. Mutualism persistence and abandonment during the evolution of the mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Am. Nat.* 188, E113–E125. <https://doi.org/10.5061/dryad.n8bm9>
- Minagawa, M., Wada, E., 1984. Stepwise enrichment of ^{15}N along food chains: Further evidence and the relation between $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and animal age. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 48, 1135–1140. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037\(84\)90204-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037(84)90204-7)
- Monnin, E., Indermühle, A., Dällenbach, A., Flückiger, J., Stauffer, B., Stocker, T.F., Raynaud, D., Barnola, J.M., 2001. Atmospheric CO_2 concentrations over the last glacial termination. *Science* 291, 112–4. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.291.5501.112>
- Norby, R.J., Warren, J.M., Iversen, C.M., Medlyn, B.E., McMurtrie, R.E., 2010. CO_2 enhancement of forest productivity constrained by limited nitrogen availability. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U. S. A.* 107, 19368–73. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1006463107>
- Pace, G M, Volk, R.J., Jackson, W. a, 1990. Nitrate reduction in response to CO_2 -limited photosynthesis: Relationship to carbohydrate supply and nitrate reductase activity in maize seedlings. *Plant Physiol.* 92, 286–92. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.92.2.286>
- Perry, L., Michael Quigg, J., 2011. Starch remains and stone boiling in the Texas Panhandle part II: Identifying Wildrye (*Elymus* spp.). *Plains Anthropol.* 56, 109–119. <https://doi.org/10.1179/pan.2011.011>
- Petit, R.J., Raynaud, D., Basile, I., Chappellaz, J., Ritz, C., Delmotte, M., Legrand, M., Lorius, C., Pe, L., 1999. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature* 399, 429–413. <https://doi.org/10.1038/20859>
- Pinto, H., Sharwood, R.E., Tissue, D.T., Ghannoum, O., 2014. Photosynthesis of C_3 , C_3 –

- C_4 , and C_4 grasses at glacial CO_2 . *J. Exp. Bot.* 65, 3669–3681. <https://doi.org/10.1093/jxb/eru155>
- Polley, H.W., Johnson, H.B., Marino, B.D., Mayeux, H.S., 1993. Increase in C_3 plant water-use efficiency and biomass over glacial to present CO_2 concentrations. *Nature* 361, 61–64. <https://doi.org/10.1038/361061a0>
- Post, D.M., 2002. Using stable isotopes to estimate trophic position: Models, methods, and assumptions. *Ecology* 83, 703–718. [https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658\(2002\)083\[0703:USITET\]2.0.CO;2](https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658(2002)083[0703:USITET]2.0.CO;2)
- R Core Team, 2013. R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing.
- Rachmilevitch, S., Cousins, A.B., Bloom, A.J., 2004. Nitrate assimilation in plant shoots depends on photorespiration. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 101, 11506–11510.
- Reich, P.B., Hobbie, S.E., Lee, T., Ellsworth, D.S., West, J.B., Tilman, D., Knops, J.M.H., Naeem, S., Trost, J., 2006. Nitrogen limitation constrains sustainability of ecosystem response to CO_2 . *Nature* 440, 922–925. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature04486>
- Ripley, B.S., Cunniff, J., Osborne, C.P., 2013. Photosynthetic acclimation and resource use by the C_3 and C_4 subspecies of *Alloteropsis semialata* in low CO_2 atmospheres. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 19, 900–910. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.12091>
- Robinson, D., 2001. $\delta^{15}N$ as an integrator of the nitrogen. *Trends Ecol. Evol.* 16, 153–162. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347\(00\)02098-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(00)02098-X)
- Royer, D.L., 2001. Stomatal density and stomatal index as indicators of paleoatmospheric CO_2 concentration. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 114, 1–28. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667\(00\)00074-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667(00)00074-9)
- Sage, R.F., 1995. Was low atmospheric CO_2 during the Pleistocene a limiting factor for the origin of agriculture? *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 1, 93–106. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.1995.tb00009.x>
- Sage, Rowan F, Cowling, S.A., 1999. Implications of stress in low CO_2 atmospheres of the past: Are today's plants too conservative for a high CO_2 world? in: Luo, Y., Mooney, H.A. (Eds.), *Carbon Dioxide and Environmental Stress*. Academic Press, San Diego, CA, USA, pp. 289–304.
- Schneider, C. a, Rasband, W.S., Eliceiri, K.W., 2012. NIH Image to ImageJ: 25 years of image analysis. *Nat. Methods* 9, 671–675. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nmeth.2089>
- Stevenson, F.J., Stevenson, E.J., Cole, M.A., 1999. *Cycles of soils: carbon, nitrogen, phosphorus, sulfur, micronutrients*. John Wiley & Sons, Ltd.
- Tcherkez, G., Farquhar, G.D., 2006. Viewpoint: Isotopic fractionation by plant nitrate

- reductase, twenty years later. *Funct. Plant Biol.* 33, 531.
<https://doi.org/10.1071/FP05284>
- Temme, A.A., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2013. Meta-analysis reveals profound responses of plant traits to glacial CO₂ levels. *Ecol. Evol.* 3, 4525–4535. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.836>
- Temme, A.A., Liu, J.C., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2015. Winners always win: Growth of a wide range of plant species from low to future high CO₂. *Ecol. Evol.* 5, 4949–4961. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.1687>
- Tissue, D., Griffin, K., Thomas, R., Strain, B., 1995. Effects of low and elevated CO₂ on C₃ and C₄ annuals -II. Photosynthesis and leaf biochemistry. *Oecologia* 101, 21–28.
- Tyson, R. V., Simonne, E.H., Davis, M., Lamb, E.M., White, J.M., Treadwell, D.D., 2007. Effect of nutrient solution, nitrate-nitrogen concentration, and pH on nitrification rate in perlite medium. *J. Plant Nutr.* 30, 901–913. <https://doi.org/10.1080/15226510701375101>
- Ward, J.K., Antonovics, J., Thomas, R.B., Strain, B.R., 2000. Is atmospheric CO₂ a selective agent on model C₃ annuals? *Oecologia* 123, 330–341. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420051019>
- Ward, J.K., Strain, B.R., 1997. Effects of low and elevated CO₂ partial pressure on growth and reproduction of *Arabidopsis thaliana* from different elevations. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 20, 254–260. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1997.d01-59.x>
- Wardle, D.A., 1992. A comparative assessment of factors which influence microbial biomass carbon and nitrogen levels in soil. *Biol. Rev.* 67, 321–358. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-185X.1992.tb00728.x>
- Yoneyama, T., Handley, L.L., Scrimgeour, C.M., Fisher, D.B., Raven, J.A., 1997. Variations of the natural abundances of nitrogen and carbon isotopes in *Triticum aestivum*, with special reference to phloem and xylem exudates. *New Phytol.* 137, 205–213.
- Yoneyama, T., Omata, T., Nakata, S., Yazaki, J., 1991. Fractionation of nitrogen isotopes during the uptake and assimilation of ammonia by plants. *Plant Cell Physiol.* 32, 1211–1217.
- Zazula, Grant D., Schweger, C.E., Beaudoin, A.B., McCourt, G.H., 2006. Macrofossil and pollen evidence for full-glacial steppe within an ecological mosaic along the Bluefish River, eastern Beringia. *Quat. Int.* 142–143, 2–19. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.QUAINT.2005.03.010>
- Zazula, G. D., Telka, A.M., Harington, C.R., Schweger, C.E., Mathewes, R.W., 2006. New Spruce (*Picea* spp.) macrofossils from Yukon territory: Implications for late Pleistocene refugia in Eastern Beringia. *Arctic* 59, 391–400.

Chapter 3

3 Plant-mycorrhizal interactions differ between past low CO₂ conditions and current CO₂ concentrations

3.1 Abstract

The association between plants and arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi has been one of the most important symbioses on earth in the recent geological past. While much is uncertain regarding the impact of future elevated CO₂ on plant-mycorrhizal interactions, even less is known about how this association functioned in the past, when CO₂ concentrations were far below modern values. Similarly, whether mycorrhizal associations can shift plant C and N isotope composition at low CO₂ conditions of the past is currently unknown despite the importance of isotope data in paleo-reconstructions. To address these knowledge gaps, I grew *Elymus canadensis* at CO₂ conditions representative of the Last Glacial Maximum (180 ppm), pre-Industrial Revolution (270 ppm), and current levels (400 ppm) with and without association with *Glomus intraradices*. I found that the mycorrhizal association decreased root biomass and [C] of leaves and roots across all CO₂ concentrations, but net photosynthetic rates increased with growth CO₂ more strongly in control than mycorrhizal plants. Plants grown at 180 ppm CO₂ relied on the mycorrhizae to enhance N assimilation, resulting in a ¹⁵N-depletion of 2.7‰ in mycorrhizal *versus* control plants, a shift in N isotope composition that could confound trophic level discrimination. Our results show that a mycorrhizal association that does not enhance N assimilation and leads to reduced photosynthetic rates at current CO₂ levels does not have the same effects at the low CO₂ conditions of the past. Additionally, paleo-reconstructions of ancient food webs based on δ¹⁵N can be affected by whether an animal consumed leaves and(or) roots of mycorrhizal plants.

3.2 Introduction

The symbiosis between plants and arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi is arguably one of the most important and ancient symbioses on earth, having evolved more than 460 million years ago (Cairney, 2000; Smith and Read, 2008). Approximately 80 % of all known land plants can establish mycorrhizal associations, with about 74 % of angiosperms species being known to associate with arbuscular mycorrhizae (Brundrett, 2009; Wang and Qiu, 2006). In this association, the arbuscular fungi increase plant access to soil nutrients, especially phosphorus and nitrogen, by acquiring nutrients with their hyphae, extending the range of root foraging (Govindarajulu *et al.*, 2005; Smith and Read, 2008). In exchange, plants provide the fungi with carbohydrates, where up to 20% of photosynthetically-fixed carbon can be transferred to the mycorrhizae (Jakobsen and Rosendahl, 1990; Wright *et al.*, 1998a). Although this association is commonly seen as beneficial to plant development and growth (Van Der Heijden, 2004; Wright *et al.*, 1998b), its mutualistic benefits are uncertain in future climatic scenarios, where atmospheric CO₂ concentrations are predicted to continue rising above current levels (Mohan *et al.*, 2014). Studies investigating plant-mycorrhizal interactions at elevated CO₂ have found conflicting results. In some studies, arbuscular mycorrhizal colonization increases under high CO₂ (Lovelock *et al.*, 1996; Rillig *et al.*, 1999), in others, colonization varies depending on species and growth environment (Gamper *et al.*, 2004; Klironomos *et al.*, 1998; Rillig *et al.*, 1998; Tang *et al.*, 2009), and yet in others, mycorrhizal colonization is unaffected by CO₂ enrichment (Allen *et al.*, 2005; Clark *et al.*, 2009). This variability in responses regarding enhanced or decreased mycorrhizal association is also observed in ectomycorrhizal fungi colonizing plants grown at elevated CO₂ (Lukac *et al.*, 2003; Parrent *et al.*, 2006; Parrent and Vilgalys, 2007).

While the impact of elevated CO₂ on plant-mycorrhizal interactions is unclear, it is even less certain how this association functioned in the recent geological past, when CO₂ concentrations were far lower than modern values (Petit *et al.*, 1999). For ~400,000 years before the Industrial Revolution, CO₂ concentrations were below 270 ppm (Augustin *et al.*, 2004), with CO₂ concentrations as low as 180 ppm by the end of the Last Glacial Maximum, about 20,000 years ago (Petit *et al.*, 1999). Such circumstances raise the

question of whether plant traits that evolved under low CO₂ conditions may still influence how plants respond to current increasing CO₂ concentrations (Becklin *et al.*, 2017; Franks *et al.*, 2013; Gerhart and Ward, 2010). As low CO₂ availability reduces photosynthesis and carbohydrate production (Cowling and Sykes, 1999; Tissue *et al.*, 1995), the capacity of mycorrhizal plants to allocate carbon to the fungi may have been reduced in the past. The association could potentially shift from mutualist to parasitic if the C costs of the association to plants exceeds the net benefit being provided by fungal nutrient uptake (Johnson *et al.*, 1997). Becklin *et al.* (2016) present the only study that investigated mycorrhizal association across a range of CO₂ concentrations, including sub-ambient CO₂, and found that the arbuscular mycorrhizal association stimulated growth in *Taraxacum officinale* at elevated CO₂, but suppressed it at low CO₂. In the same study, however, *Taraxacum ceratophorum* responded positively to the mycorrhizal association at all CO₂ concentrations.

The scarcity of data on the subject, and the variable effects of CO₂ on mycorrhizal colonization, not only challenges our understanding of plant-fungal interactions in the past, but also has implications for paleobiology studies that reconstruct ancient environmental dynamics based on plant material through techniques such as stable isotopes. Carbon ($\delta^{13}\text{C}$) and nitrogen ($\delta^{15}\text{N}$) isotope compositions of ancient plant samples are commonly used as indicators to identify plant physiological features such as photosynthetic pathway and net CO₂ assimilation rates, as well as to derive past environmental conditions and establish the isotopic baseline of food webs (Boecklen *et al.*, 2011; Cui and Schubert, 2016; Hare *et al.*, 2018; Reichgelt and D'Andrea, 2019; Tahmasebi *et al.*, 2018, 2017). Arbuscular mycorrhizal association shifts the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of plants grown at current CO₂ conditions by reducing discrimination against ¹³C, an effect that has been associated with increased water use efficiency (Querejeta *et al.*, 2003, 2006). Mycorrhizal association also changes the N isotope composition of plants tissues, as the organic N transferred from the fungus to the plant is depleted of ¹⁵N (Hobbie *et al.*, 2005). This depletion mostly occurs due to enzymatic reactions within the fungi producing ¹⁵N-depleted amino acids, especially arginine, which are transferred to the plant host (Cruz *et al.*, 2007; Hobbie *et al.*, 1999; Hobbie and Högberg, 2012). While only one study observed that low CO₂ effects on plant growth can be influenced by

mycorrhizal association (Becklin *et al.*, 2016), the degree to which mycorrhizal associations can shift plant isotope composition at low CO₂ conditions of the past is currently unknown.

When grown under C-limited conditions, one scenario is that plants may adopt a more conservative C-use strategy that would result in reduced carbohydrate allocation to mycorrhizal fungi, thus restricting the mutualistic benefits of the association. In this scenario discrimination against ¹³C in roots of mycorrhizal low CO₂-grown plants may not be different from non-mycorrhizal plants, as the carbohydrate flow to the roots would not be enhanced by the presence of the mycorrhizae. The δ¹⁵N of mycorrhizal plants would also be similar to non-mycorrhizal plants, as a weaker mycorrhizal association would limit the N provided to the plant host by the fungi, or discrimination against ¹⁵N may decrease in mycorrhizal compared to non-mycorrhizal plants if the symbionts compete for N.

In a second scenario, under low CO₂ conditions, plants may more closely associate with mycorrhizae, thus enhancing access to soil N. The extra N can then be invested in the photosynthetic apparatus, increasing photosynthetic rates and carbohydrate production in this C-limited environment. If the second scenario were to happen however, discrimination against ¹³C may be less than observed in ambient CO₂-grown plants, as C assimilation would be up-regulated in low CO₂ plants to meet the demand for growth and C allocation to the fungi. In this case, plant δ¹⁵N may become more negative than non-mycorrhizal plants grown at low CO₂, as a greater provision of N by the fungi allows for greater discrimination against ¹⁵N.

To test these hypotheses, I grew *Elymus canadensis* at CO₂ conditions representative of the Last Glacial Maximum (~180 ppm), pre-Industrial Revolution (~270 ppm), and current levels (~400 ppm). *Elymus canadensis* was chosen since the presence of this genus is well-recorded during the LGM and was likely an important resource for ancient humans (Zazula *et al.*, 2006; Perry and Quigg 2011). We then inoculated *E. canadensis* with *Glomus intraradices*, which is a model fungus in arbuscular mycorrhizal research

and known to be highly effective in mobilizing N (Govindarajulu *et al.*, 2005; Miller and Cramer, 2004).

3.3 Methods

3.3.1 Experimental design and treatments

The experiment was replicated twice in time using three growth chambers (GCW15, Environmental Growth Chambers, Chagrin Falls, OH, USA). In each chamber, CO₂ concentrations were maintained to represent current ambient CO₂ (AC, ~400 ppm), pre-industrial low CO₂ (LC, ~270 ppm) and CO₂ levels like those at the end of The Last Glacial maximum (GC, ~180 ppm). Air CO₂ levels in the chambers were regulated by a CO₂ scrubbing system. The system comprised an acrylic box filled with soda lime to absorb CO₂ from the air. A CO₂ analyzer (LI-820, LI-COR, Lincoln, NE, USA) coupled with a DIN process controller (Omega CN7633, Omega Engineering, Stamford, CT, USA) was connected to fans attached to the box's lid. CO₂ concentrations in the chambers averaged 400.1 ± 0.6 ppm, 269.3 ± 1.1 , and 180.9 ± 1.0 (means \pm standard deviation) for the AC, LC and GC treatments, respectively. Chambers were maintained at a relative humidity of $74 \pm 5\%$, photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) of 300 ± 28 $\mu\text{mol photons m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, photoperiod of 12.5 hours, and air temperature of 16 ± 0.1 °C (means \pm SE). Day length and temperature were chosen based on the average growing season conditions of the last three years at the site where the seeds were harvested (Environment Canada, Midland WPCP Station).

In each replicate experiment, twelve 2 L pots filled with sterilized soil (Pro-Mix, Premier Tech Ltda., Quebec, Canada) were placed in each chamber and planted with *Elymus canadensis* seeds (obtained from Wildflower Farm, Coldwater, ON, Canada - 44°654'241" N, 79°558'969" E). Once plants were 30 days old, the seedlings were removed from the pots and weighed. Half of the seedlings in each chamber were then inoculated with the arbuscular mycorrhizal fungus *Glomus intraradices*, and all plants were replanted in their original pots. The other half of the plants were not inoculated and

served as control. The fungal strain was provided by the Agriculture and Agri-Food Canada (AAFC) branch at Ottawa from the Glomeromycetes in vitro Collection (GINCO). The fungus was propagated on modified Strullu-Romand medium (Declerck *et al.*, 1998). Pots were rotated weekly within each chamber, and plants were watered three times per week and fertilized weekly with a half-strength Hoagland's recipe (Hoagland and Arnon, 1950). Once the first replicate of the experiment was finished, the experiment was repeated, rotating the CO₂ treatments between the growth chambers.

3.3.2 Biomass

Ninety days after inoculation, plants were harvested and weighed to assess changes in fresh biomass after inoculation. Relative growth rate (RGR) was then calculated as (Hoffmann and Poorter, 2002):

$$RGR = \frac{\ln(W_2) - \ln(W_1)}{t_2 - t_1}$$

where W_1 is the fresh weight on the day the plants were inoculated ($t_1 = 1$), and W_2 is the fresh weight at harvest ($t_2 = 90$). All plants were then divided into roots and shoots to determine the masses of these separate tissues and dried at 60 °C to a constant mass, and weighed.

3.3.3 Fungal colonization

After fresh biomass was assessed, two-centimeter sections of twelve fine roots from both the control and mycorrhizal treatments (12 roots from 12 plants) were analyzed for fungal infection using the grid line method (Giovannetti and Mosse, 1980). Before staining, roots were cleared as per Nylund *et al.* (1982) through consecutive baths in KOH, bleach in H₂O₂, HCl, and deionized water. The roots were then stained with 0.05 % Trypan blue diluted in lactophenol (Phillips and Hayman, 1970). Presence and absence of infection

was recorded and expressed as a percentage (Giovannetti and Mosse, 1980). The control plants were also assessed to ensure that accidental inoculation did not occur.

3.3.4 Isotopes, C and N concentration

For measurements of $\delta^{13}\text{C}$, $\delta^{15}\text{N}$, and C and N concentrations, fully mature leaves and sections containing entire roots (from the root crown to the tip) were harvested from each plant, dried at 60 °C to constant mass, and ground. The isotopic abundance was measured using a Delta V^{Plus} isotope-ratio mass-spectrometer (IRMS; Thermo Scientific, Bremen, Germany) coupled in continuous flow mode with an elemental analyzer (Costech Analytical Technologies, Valencia, CA, USA). The C and N isotope results from the plant material are presented in the usual delta notation ($\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$) calibrated to VPDB and AIR, respectively:

$$\delta(\text{‰}) = \left(\frac{R_{\text{sample}} - R_{\text{standard}}}{R_{\text{standard}}} \right)$$

where R is the ratio between the heavy to light isotope for the sample (R_{sample}) and the standard (R_{standard}).

The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of all tissue samples were adjusted to a common value for the atmospheric CO_2 (see Appendix C). The measured $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of the chamber CO_2 varied slightly from chamber to chamber, likely because of fractionation during interaction with the soda lime used to control CO_2 levels. The current global average $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of atmospheric CO_2 (−8.4‰, NOAA/ESRL, <https://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/dv/data/>) was used as the common value. The difference between the common and measured value for each chamber/treatment was used to adjust the measured $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of each plant tissue. This approach is similar to the use of the Suess correction (Keeling, 1979) to adjust the carbon isotope composition of modern plants to pre-Industrial Revolution (AD 1850) values.

The C and N elemental and isotope analyses of the plant tissues were performed in separate analytical sessions, and for both, the standards USGS40 (glutamic acid; accepted mass fraction of C = 40.80 ‰, accepted mass fraction of N = 9.52 ‰; accepted $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ = −

26.39 ‰, accepted $\delta^{15}\text{N} = -4.52$ ‰) and USGS41a (glutamic acid; accepted $\delta^{13}\text{C} = +36.55$ ‰, accepted $\delta^{15}\text{N} = +47.55$ ‰) were used. Sample reproducibility was ± 0.07 ‰ for $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and ± 0.05 % gDW⁻¹ for N concentration (26 replicates). Sample reproducibility for $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ was ± 0.05 ‰ and for C concentration, ± 2.37 % gDW⁻¹ (30 replicates). Concerning tests for accuracy, a $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of -24.01 ± 0.02 ‰ (accepted value = -24.04 ‰), and a $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of $+6.40 \pm 0.02$ ‰ (accepted value = $+6.40$ ‰) were obtained for 77 analyses of an internal laboratory keratin standard.

To collect chamber-air CO₂ in the chambers, septum-sealed vials were first evacuated and then opened and left open in the chambers overnight; the vials were then sealed the next morning just before measurements. The C isotope composition of atmospheric CO₂ was measured using a GasBench II (Thermo Scientific, Bremen, Germany) connected in continuous flow mode to a Delta V^{Plus} XL IRMS (Thermo Scientific, Bremen, Germany), using an autosampler (Combi Pal - CTC Analytics GmbH, Switzerland) to deliver the atmospheric CO₂ from the septum-sealed sampling vials to the GasBench II. Because of the low CO₂ concentration of CO₂ in the chamber-air samples for chambers having 180 ppm CO₂, the gas was cryogenically frozen as it was collected from the GasBench II for delivery to the IRMS. This allowed sufficient CO₂ to be collected for reliable isotopic analysis. The standard CO₂ against which the sample CO₂ was compared was also diluted to concentrations similar to the samples. Sample reproducibility was ± 0.31 ‰ for 38 replicates, and a $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of -10.34 ± 0.04 ‰ (accepted value = -10.40 ‰) was obtained for 44 analyses of carbon dioxide carbon isotope reference gas (Oztek Trading Corporation, Safford, AZ, USA).

3.3.5 Gas exchange measurements

Net CO₂ assimilation rates at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and dark respiration at 400 ppm (R_{dark}) were measured 90 days after the fungal inoculation using a portable photosynthesis system (Walz GFS-3000, Effeltrich, Germany). A_{growth} was measured on two fully mature leaves at the base of the blade crown of each plant. Cuvette conditions included a 16 °C leaf temperature, 750 $\mu\text{mol s}^{-1}$ flow rate, and light conditions of 1200 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, which

was established as light-saturated based on light-response curves (data not shown); A_{growth} was measured once gas exchange was stable under the cuvette conditions. After the A_{growth} measurements, CO_2 in the cuvette was changed, when necessary, to 400 ppm, lights were turned off, and plants were dark-acclimated for at least 20 minutes until a stable R_{dark} was achieved for R_{dark} measurements.

3.3.6 Statistical analysis

The effect of growth CO_2 , fungal inoculation and their interaction was tested with two-way ANOVAs. Where treatment effects were significant ($p \leq 0.05$), Tukey's HSD was used to identify differences among the treatments. Results are shown as means \pm standard error. Data analysis was performed in R 3.2.1 (R Core Team, 2013).

3.4 Results

CO_2 effects were observed in both leaf, root, and total biomass at harvest, with higher biomass in AC plants compared to plants grown at sub-ambient CO_2 . While there was no inoculation effect on leaf biomass, root biomass was on average 19 % lower in the mycorrhizal treatment (Table 3.1, Figure 3.1). The RGR 90 days after fungal inoculation in the mycorrhizal treatment showed that plants in each CO_2 treatment grew at the same rate as non-inoculated plants (Figure 3.1). In the mycorrhizal treatment, root colonization was negatively correlated with growth CO_2 . Root colonization by the mycorrhizal fungi was 35.09 ± 2.79 % (means \pm sd) in AC plants, 45.65 ± 6.42 % of LC roots were colonized, and 63.58 ± 2.16 % of GC roots were colonized by the mycorrhizae. Thus, root colonization was 30 % and 81 % higher in LC and GC plants, respectively, compared to AC plants. Colonization was not observed in the control treatment.

While $[\text{C}]_{\text{leaf}}$ varied with growth CO_2 , with lower CO_2 concentrations resulting in higher $[\text{C}]_{\text{leaf}}$ compared to ambient CO_2 , $[\text{C}]_{\text{root}}$ was unaffected by growth CO_2 (Table 3.1, Figure 3.2). In addition, regardless of growth CO_2 , the association with mycorrhizae decreased

[C] in both leaves and roots by ~10 % compared to control plants. Association with mycorrhizal fungi lowered the carbon isotope composition values in leaves of LC and GC plants, but not AC plants in comparison to leaves of control plants (Table 3.1, Figure 3.2, Appendix B). This increased discrimination against ^{13}C in sub-ambient CO_2 -grown plants resulted in more negative $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ in leaves of GC and LC plants (a reduction of 1 ‰ and 3.4 ‰, respectively; Figure 3.2). While mycorrhizal association also resulted in more negative $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ in roots, this effect varied depending on growth CO_2 . The decrease in $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values in mycorrhizal compared to control plants was small and non-significant in GC plants, but significant in both LC (2.5 ‰) and AC plants (1.2 ‰).

Table 3.1. Analysis of variance results testing growth CO₂, mycorrhizal inoculation, and their interaction term on plant traits. Carbon isotope signature of leaves ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$), and carbon concentration in leaves and roots ($[\text{C}]_{\text{leaf}}$, $[\text{C}]_{\text{root}}$, respectively); nitrogen isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$) and nitrogen concentration in leaves and roots ($[\text{N}]_{\text{leaf}}$, $[\text{N}]_{\text{root}}$, respectively); net CO₂ assimilation rates at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}); dark respiration measured at 400 ppm CO₂ (R_{dark}). The p -values are shown with significant effects highlighted in bold ($p \leq 0.05$).

	[CO ₂]	Inoculation	[CO ₂] x inoculation
Leaf biomass	< 0.001	0.086	0.239
Root biomass	0.004	0.029	0.403
Total biomass	< 0.001	0.010	0.127
Relative growth rate	0.120	0.807	0.182
Root colonization	< 0.001		
$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$	< 0.001	< 0.001	< 0.001
$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$	0.073	< 0.001	0.011
$[\text{C}]_{\text{leaf}}$	0.048	< 0.001	0.503
$[\text{C}]_{\text{root}}$	0.584	< 0.001	0.233
$\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$	0.002	0.098	0.134
$\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$	0.028	0.158	< 0.001
$[\text{N}]_{\text{leaf}}$	< 0.001	0.022	0.005
$[\text{N}]_{\text{root}}$	0.002	< 0.001	0.007
A_{growth}	< 0.001	0.173	0.007
R_{dark}	< 0.001	0.008	0.036

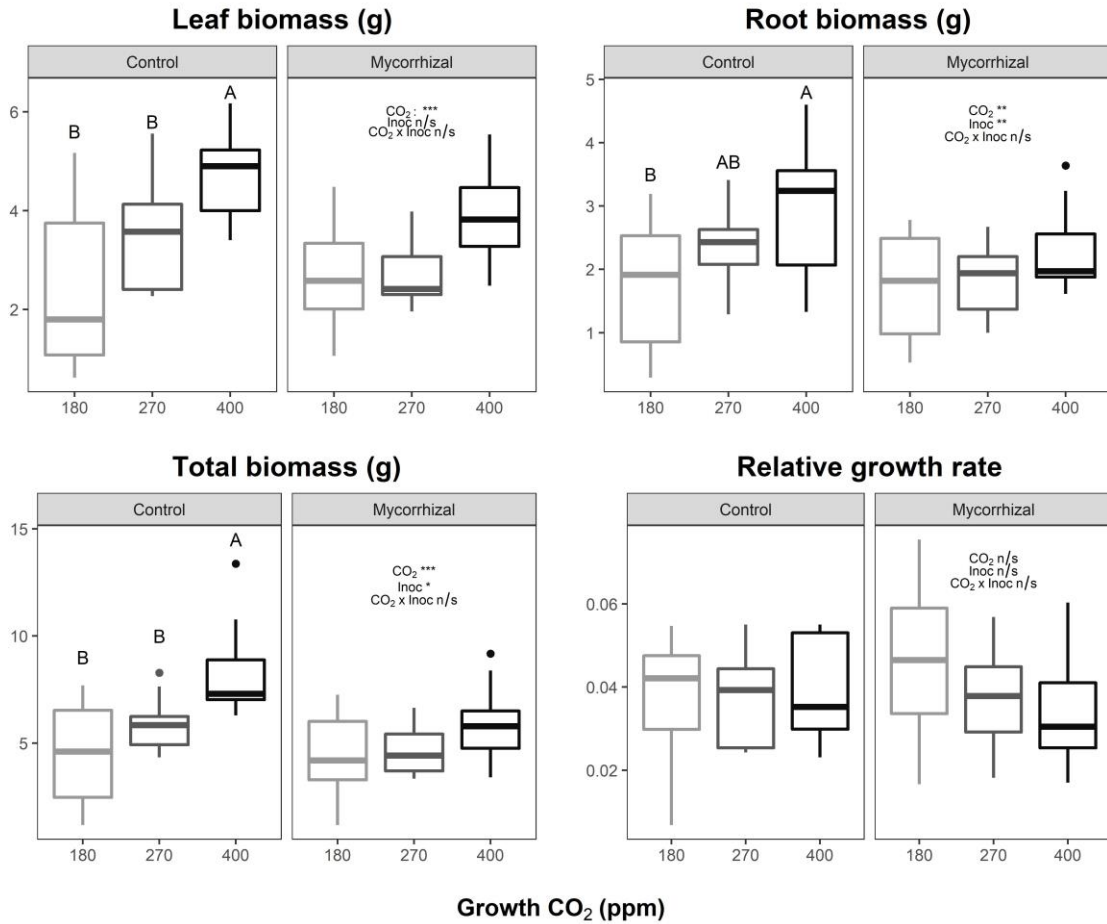


Figure 3.1. Leaf, root, and total biomass, and relative growth rate. Upper-case letters (shown only for the control data) represent differences between growth CO₂ when there is no significant interaction term; levels of significance for CO₂ and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 12$.

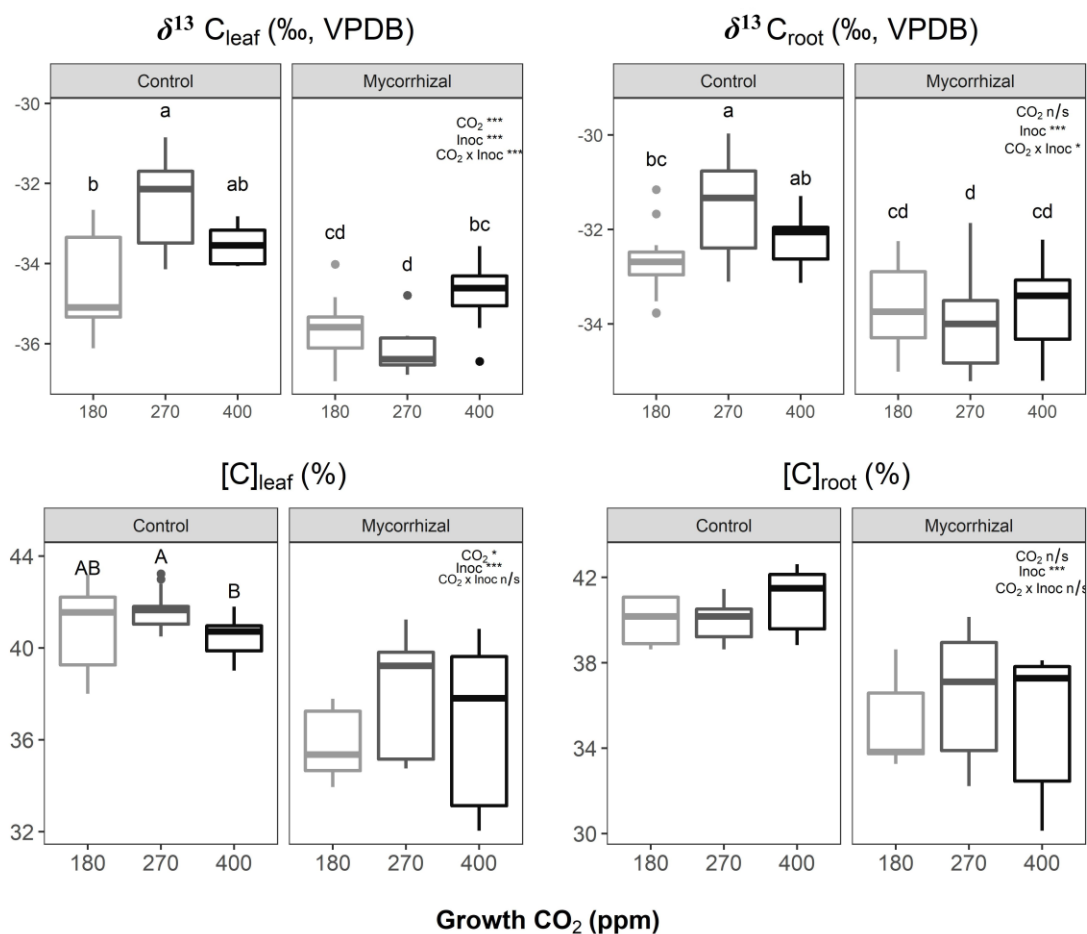


Figure 3.2. Variations in carbon isotope composition and concentration. Carbon isotope signature of leaves ($\delta^{13}C_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}C_{\text{root}}$), and leaf and root C concentration ([C]_{leaf} and [C]_{root}) Levels of significance for CO₂ and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Where the interaction term was significant, differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only for the control data) represent differences between growth CO₂ concentrations when there is no significant interaction term. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 12$.

Association with mycorrhizae in GC plants resulted in increased [N] in both leaves and roots in comparison to control plants and the other growth CO₂ treatments (Table 3.1, Figure 3.3). While LC and AC plants had similar [N] in the control and mycorrhizal treatments, mycorrhizal GC plants had 16 % and 49 % higher [N] in leaves and roots, respectively, in comparison to control GC plants. While $\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$ was unaffected by the mycorrhizal treatment, $\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$ was influenced by the interaction between growth CO₂ and fungal colonization (Figure 3.3). This effect was particularly strong in roots of GC plants, where there was a depletion of ¹⁵N by 2.7 ‰ in mycorrhizal compared to control plants.

Net photosynthetic rates increased with growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) as A_{growth} was higher in AC and LC than GC plants (Table 3.1, Figure 3.4). The interaction between mycorrhizal colonization and growth CO₂ affected A_{growth} , such that rising CO₂ stimulated A_{growth} more strongly in control than mycorrhizal plants. Effects of the interaction between growth CO₂ and mycorrhizal association in dark respiration (R_{dark}) were mainly present in AC plants, where R_{dark} rates were 53 % lower in mycorrhizal than control plants. (Figure 3.4).

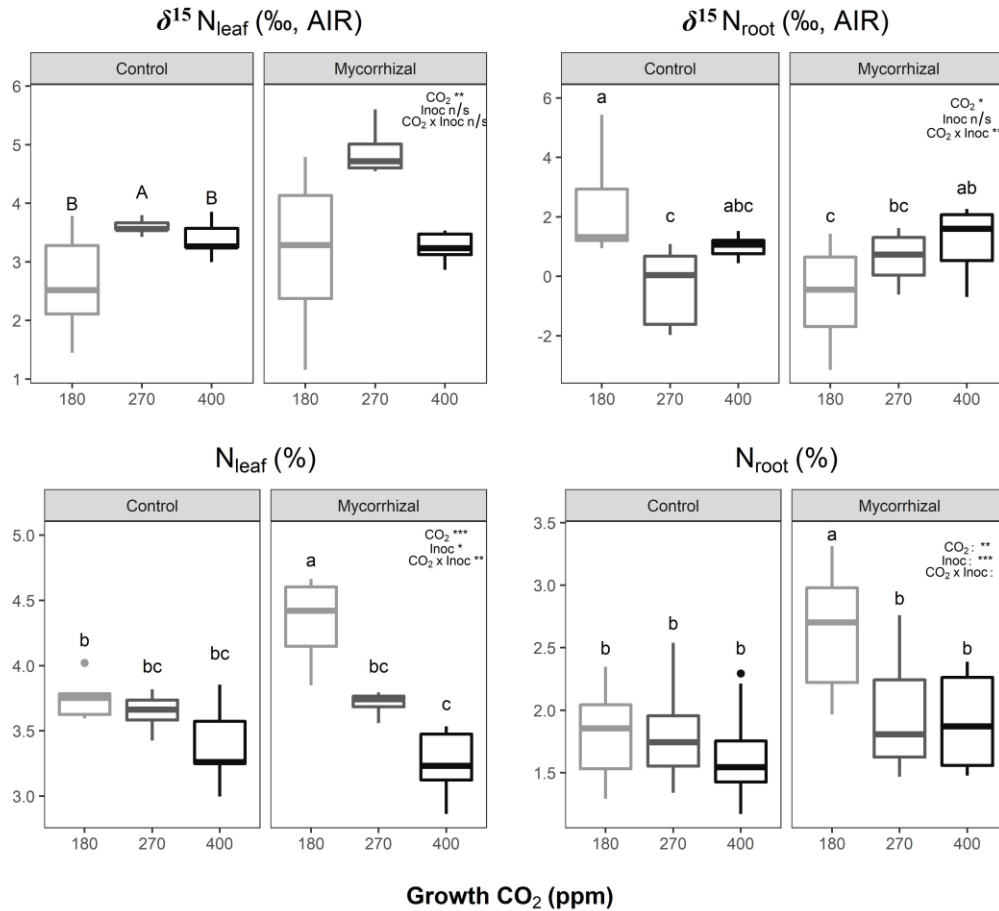


Figure 3.3. Nitrogen isotope composition and nitrogen concentration. N isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{root}}$), and leaf and root N concentrations ($[\text{N}]_{\text{leaf}}$ and $[\text{N}]_{\text{root}}$). Levels of significance for CO_2 and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Where the interaction term was significant, differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters. Upper-case letters (shown only on the control data) represent differences between growth CO_2 concentrations when there is no significant interaction term. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 12$.

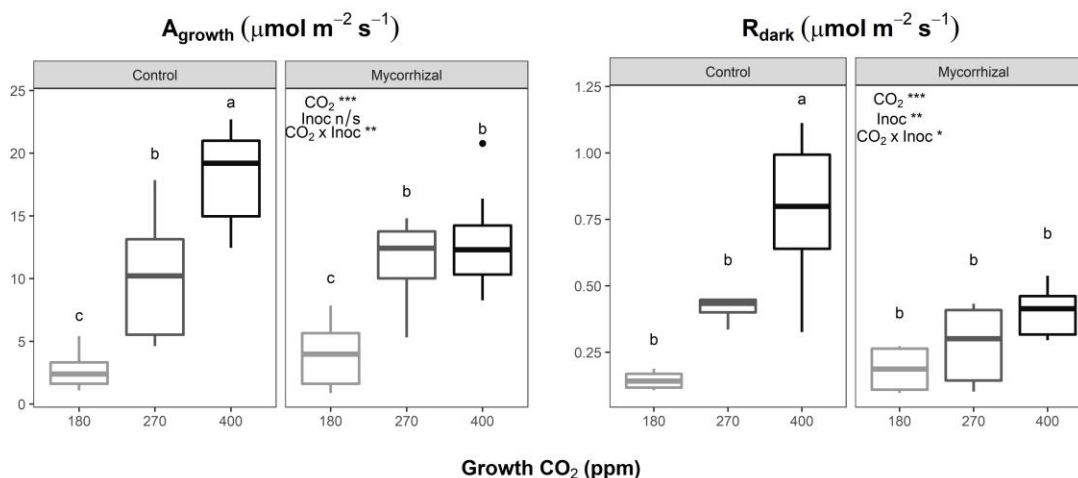


Figure 3.4. Net CO₂ assimilation (A) and dark respiration (R_{dark}) rates. A measured at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and dark respiration measured at 400 ppm (R_{dark}). Levels of significance for CO₂ and inoculation effects and their interaction term are given as: * if $p \leq 0.05$, ** if $p \leq 0.01$, and *** if $p \leq 0.001$. Differences between groups are represented by lower-case letters considering a significant interaction term for $p \leq 0.05$. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n=12$.

3.5 Discussion

I investigated whether low CO₂ conditions of the past alter mycorrhizal colonization, and the impact of mycorrhizal association on plant growth, leaf carbon fluxes, and tissue C and N isotope composition. I found that the mycorrhizal association increased N access for *E. canadensis* grown at 180 ppm: GC plants with mycorrhizae had higher leaf and root [N] than control GC plants, despite having similar leaf and root mass. The stronger impact of mycorrhizae on the N economy of GC plants was associated with a greater degree of root colonization. There was no evidence, however, that the higher colonization rates in GC plants reduced plant carbon availability (as might be expected with a stronger C sink) compared to mycorrhizal LC and AC plants. In contrast, mycorrhizal inoculation dampened the effect of rising CO₂ on leaf gas exchange and plant growth, such that A_{growth} and R_{dark} were similar between LC and AC mycorrhizal plants, as were growth increments between all CO₂ levels in mycorrhizal plants.

3.5.1 GC plants associated with mycorrhizae benefited from higher [N]

The establishment of mycorrhizal associations has been shown to enhance N assimilation in certain plant species (*e.g.*, He *et al.*, 2003; Hodge and Fitter, 2010; Tobar *et al.*, 1994), and the carbon supplied by the plant host can trigger changes in fungal gene expression that stimulate N uptake and transport by the mycorrhizal fungi (Fellbaum *et al.*, 2012). Furthermore, enhanced N uptake through mycorrhizal associations can be a strategy to ameliorate environmental stresses such as low soil fertility (Karst *et al.*, 2008) and water stress (Saia *et al.*, 2014; Tobar *et al.*, 1994). For instance, Subramanian and Charest (1998) found that under drought stress, the activity of key enzymes involved in N assimilation was higher in *Zea mays* colonized by *G. intraradices* than in non-inoculated plants. In the same way, our data indicate that *E. canadensis* relied on *G. intraradices* to enhance N assimilation as a strategy to cope with the C-limitation being imposed by the growth environment. Mycorrhizal association reduced plant C investment in root tissue, as both root biomass and [C]_{root} decreased in mycorrhizal plants in all CO₂ treatments.

Since mycorrhizal fungi complement root functions with regard to accessing soil nutrients (Newsham *et al.*, 1995; Van Der Heijden, 2004), plants appear to have allocated C to the fungi in exchange for these functions at the expense of root growth (Cui and Caldwell, 1996; Rapparini *et al.*, 1994; Saravesi *et al.*, 2014; Smith and Gianinazzi-Pearson, 1990). However, GC plants seem to have benefited the most from this exchange in terms of N provisioning. Both $[N]_{\text{root}}$ and $[N]_{\text{leaf}}$ in GC plants were higher in mycorrhizal compared to control plants, while $[N]_{\text{root}}$ and $[N]_{\text{leaf}}$ in LC and AC plants were unaltered by mycorrhizal inoculation. This is also supported by the observation that GC plants had the highest percentage of colonized roots among the CO₂ treatments. Conversely, LC and AC plants, grown in environments where C was less limiting than that experienced by GC plants, did not benefit from increased N uptake through the mycorrhizal association. Under less stressful growth conditions where the necessary soil nutrients are readily available, such as the well-fertilized soils used in this experiment, the mycorrhizal association can present little benefit for plant growth; growth rates can be even reduced due to the carbon demand of the mycorrhizal fungi (Eissenstat *et al.*, 1993; Smith *et al.*, 2009).

3.5.2 AC plants showed little benefit from mycorrhizae

Mycorrhizal association did not promote greater N acquisition or biomass increment in AC plants, and it actually reduced leaf carbon fluxes, such that A_{growth} and R_{dark} were lower in AC mycorrhizal than AC control plants. The interaction between growth CO₂ and inoculation influenced both A_{growth} and R_{dark} . While this response to growth CO₂ is expected given the differences in the availability of substrate for photosynthesis, the plateau in A_{growth} in mycorrhizal AC plants shows that *E. canadensis* contrasts with many species where photosynthesis is stimulated by mycorrhizal association in plants grown at ambient or elevated CO₂ (Amaya-Carpio *et al.*, 2009; Augé *et al.*, 2016; Gavito *et al.*, 2019; Kaschuk *et al.*, 2009; Miller *et al.*, 2002). How much mycorrhizae influence R_{dark} is less well-studied, although comparisons of R_{dark} between mycorrhizal and non-mycorrhizal plants have shown that differences may or may not occur depending on

species, stage growth, and interactions with other environmental conditions (Colpaert *et al.*, 1996; Del-Saz *et al.*, 2017; Fahey *et al.*, 2016; Romero-Munar *et al.*, 2017).

Nevertheless, our results show that a mycorrhizal association that does not enhance plant N tissue concentrations and that leads to reduced A_{growth} and R_{dark} under current CO_2 levels (*i.e.*, AC plants) need not have the same effects at low CO_2 conditions. Thus, the benefits for plants from this mutualistic association may have varied over time as CO_2 levels in the atmosphere increased, while potentially affecting plant N dynamics and carbon fluxes.

3.5.3 Mycorrhizal association shifts C and N isotope compositions at low CO_2

The use of C and N isotope composition of plant tissues has several applications, including investigating plant development in past environments and providing a baseline for reconstructing ancient food webs (Boecklen *et al.*, 2011; Casey and Post, 2011; Hare *et al.*, 2018; Lipp *et al.*, 1991; Tahmasebi *et al.*, 2018, 2017). Similar to previous reports (Badeck *et al.*, 2005; Cernusak *et al.*, 2009; Pardo *et al.*, 2013), we found that the C isotope composition of leaves and roots differ in their isotopic composition, with leaves having more negative $\delta^{13}\text{C}$. At low CO_2 conditions, however, the mycorrhizal association generally altered this difference by increasing the discrimination against ^{13}C and ^{15}N in leaves and roots.

The observation that discrimination against ^{13}C was unchanged in roots of mycorrhizal GC plants compared to the other CO_2 treatments is most likely the result of the higher degree of association that GC plants established with the mycorrhizal fungi. Since this association is based on C and nutrient exchange between the two symbiotic organisms, the enhanced N access provided by the fungi to the plants would stimulate larger exports of C-based compounds from the plant to the fungus. Thus, plants would use more of the C resources available, including ^{13}C . By comparison, leaves of mycorrhizal GC plants presented a higher discrimination against ^{13}C , and consequently a more negative C

isotope signature, in comparison to non-mycorrhizal GC plants. As leaves of mycorrhizal GC plants did not show enhanced growth, and consequently C use for biomass production, there was no reduction in discrimination against ^{13}C . Therefore, how the presence of the mycorrhizae differently affected $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ signals in roots and leaves adds to the complexity when using C isotopes to identify photosynthetic pathways (*i.e.*, C_3 , C_4 , CAM) and past climate conditions such as temperature, CO_2 levels, and light intensity (Cernusak *et al.*, 2013; Grocke, 2007; O'Leary, 1981). In addition, the average $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ in roots and leaves of *E. canadensis* was -33.7‰ , which is notably more negative than the average $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values for C_3 species of -27‰ (Michener and Lajtha, 2007). However, $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values in C_3 species can range between -37‰ and -20‰ (Sharp, 2007), and previous works have found similar low $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values for this species (Still *et al.*, 2003; Weremijewicz *et al.*, 2018).

Plant $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ is commonly used in paleobiology studies to identify animal diet and trophic position (Boecklen *et al.*, 2011), and although isotope trophic discrimination factors can vary depending on the organisms being studied, an enrichment of 3.4‰ in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ is considered the standard difference between trophic levels (Minagawa and Wada, 1984; Post, 2002). There are instances, however, where the trophic discrimination factor between plants and primary consumers is relatively small or there is a depletion of ^{15}N (*e.g.*, Perkins *et al.*, 2014; Post, 2002; Yoneyama *et al.*, 1997). For example, Holá *et al.* (2015) found that the N trophic discrimination factor between *Zea mays* and *Sus scrofa* was -2.3‰ . Thus, the depletion of ^{15}N found in roots of mycorrhizal GC plants (-2.7‰) compared to control GC plants shows that mycorrhizal fungi can change the N isotope composition of roots to an extent that could be mistaken for a trophic level change in an animal whose diet largely comprised such tissues. This depletion of ^{15}N in mycorrhizal GC plants is not unexpected considering that plants discriminate more against ^{15}N when the N pool available is relatively large (Evans, 2001), but to our knowledge, this has never been demonstrated before.

While colonization by the mycorrhizae decreased root $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in GC plants, $\delta^{15}\text{N}_{\text{leaf}}$ was unchanged by the mycorrhizal association. Despite enhanced [N] in both leaves and roots of mycorrhizal GC plants, different from roots, there was no increase in discrimination

against ^{15}N in leaves. It is possible that, in an effort to mitigate the effects of their C-limiting environment, GC plants may have drawn more widely on the greater N pool available in leaves to invest in the photosynthetic apparatus. GC plants, however, did not present enhanced CO_2 assimilation, as A_{growth} was similar in both non- and mycorrhizal plants. Thus, plants in both treatments may have been operating at the maximum photosynthetic capacity allowed at such CO_2 -limited environment. Besides, even if not photosynthetically active, structures such as Rubisco and other proteins can serve as N storages for the greater N pool present in the leaves (Cooke and Weih, 2005; Millard, 1988; Staswick, 1994).

There are three major implications of these observations. First, paleo-reconstructions based on $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ can be confounded if there is no knowledge whether an animal consumed either or both of leaves and roots of mycorrhizal plants. Second, low- CO_2 ecosystems may have had more extensive mycorrhizal associations than seen in current CO_2 levels. Third, mycorrhizal plants growing at low CO_2 conditions of the past may have presented a higher nutritional value to herbivores due to their higher [N]. Such observations warrant future studies of possible herbivore preference for mycorrhizal plants in the past and its implication for N transfer between trophic levels and resulting N isotope composition.

We suggest that future studies using C and N isotope of ancient plant material should consider whether the species being studied commonly forms mycorrhizal associations, and if possible, examine the material for structural fungal vestiges. Several lists identifying mycorrhizal plant species are available (Brundrett, 2009, 2002; Öpik *et al.*, 2006; Wang and Qiu, 2006), as well as several records and methods of fungal identification in fossilized plant samples (*e.g.*, Allen *et al.*, 2006; Krings *et al.*, 2013; Strullu-Derrien and Strullu, 2007; Taylor *et al.*, 2015). Finally, the significance of mycorrhizal associations within this context might be time- and species-dependent, as plant-fungal associations may have been established and abandoned over time (Maherali *et al.*, 2016).

3.6 References

- Allen, M.F., Klironomos, J.N., Treseder, K.K., Oechel, W.C., 2005. Responses of soil biota to elevated CO₂ in a chaparral ecosystem. *Ecol. Appl.* 15, 1701–1711. <https://doi.org/10.1890/03-5425>
- Allen, N., Nordlander, M., Mcgonigle, T., Basinger, J., Kaminskyj, S., 2006. Arbuscular mycorrhizae on Axel Heiberg Island (80°N) and at Saskatoon (52°N) Canada. *Can. J. Bot.* 84, 1094–1100.
- Amaya-Carpio, L., Davies, F.T., Fox, T., He, C., 2009. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi and organic fertilizer influence photosynthesis, root phosphatase activity, nutrition, and growth of *Ipomoea carnea* ssp. *fistulosa*. *Photosynthetica* 47, 1–10.
- Augé, R.M., Toler, H.D., Saxton, A.M., 2016. Mycorrhizal stimulation of leaf gas exchange in relation to root colonization, shoot size, leaf phosphorus and nitrogen: a quantitative analysis of the literature using meta-regression. *Front. Plant Sci.* 7, 1084. <https://doi.org/10.3389/fpls.2016.01084>
- Augustin, L., Barbanate, C., Barnes, P.R.F., Barnola, J.M., Bigler, M., Castellano, E., Cattani, O., Chappellaz, J., Dahl-Jensen, D., Delmonte, B., et al., 2004. Eight glacial cycles from an Antarctic ice core EPICA community members. *Nature* 429, 623–628.
- Badeck, F.-W., Tcherkez, G., Nogués, S., Piel, C., Ghashghaie, J., 2005. Post-photosynthetic fractionation of stable carbon isotopes between plant organs—a widespread phenomenon. *Rapid Commun. Mass Spectrom.* 19, 1381–1391. <https://doi.org/10.1002/rcm.1912>
- Becklin, K.M., Mullinix, G.W.R., Ward, J.K., 2016. Host plant physiology and mycorrhizal functioning shift across a glacial through future [CO₂] Gradient. *Plant Physiol.* 172, 789–801. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.16.00837>
- Becklin, K.M., Walker, S.M., Way, D.A., Ward, J.K., 2017. CO₂ studies remain key to understanding a future world. *New Phytol.* 214, 34–40. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14336>
- Boecklen, W.J., Yarnes, C.T., Cook, B.A., James, A.C., 2011. On the use of stable isotopes in trophic ecology. *Annu. Rev. Ecol. Evol. Syst.* 42, 411–440. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-ecolsys-102209-144726>
- Brundrett, M.C., 2009. Mycorrhizal associations and other means of nutrition of vascular plants: Understanding the global diversity of host plants by resolving conflicting information and developing reliable means of diagnosis. *Plant Soil* 320, 37–77. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11104-008-9877-9>
- Brundrett, M.C., 2002. Coevolution of roots and mycorrhizas of land plants. *New Phytol.* 154, 275–304. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.2002.00397.x>

- Cairney, J.W.G., 2000. Evolution of mycorrhiza systems. *Naturwissenschaften* 87, 467–475. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s001140050762>
- Casey, M.M., Post, D.M., 2011. The problem of isotopic baseline: Reconstructing the diet and trophic position of fossil animals. *Earth-Science Rev.* 106, 131–148. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.EARSCIREV.2011.02.001>
- Cernusak, L.A., Tcherkez, G., Keitel, C., Cornwell, W.K., Santiago, L.S., Knohl, A., Barbour, M.M., Williams, D.G., Reich, P.B., Ellsworth, D.S., Dawson, T.E., Griffiths, H.G., Farquhar, G.D., Wright, I.J., 2009. Why are non-photosynthetic tissues generally ^{13}C enriched compared with leaves in C_3 plants? Review and synthesis of current hypotheses. *Funct. Plant Biol.* 36, 199. <https://doi.org/10.1071/FP08216>
- Cernusak, L.A., Ubierna, N., Winter, K., Holtum, J.A.M., Marshall, J.D., Farquhar, G.D., 2013. Environmental and physiological determinants of carbon isotope discrimination in terrestrial plants. *New Phytol.* 200, 950–965. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.12423>
- Clark, N.M., Rillig, M.C., Nowak, R.S., 2009. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungal abundance in the Mojave Desert: Seasonal dynamics and impacts of elevated CO_2 . *J. Arid Environ.* 73, 834–843. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.JARIDENV.2009.03.004>
- Colpaert, J. V, van Laere, A., van Assche, J.A., 1996. Carbon and nitrogen allocation in ectomycorrhizal and non-mycorrhizal *Pinus sylvestris* L. seedlings. *Tree Physiol.* 16, 787–793.
- Cooke, J.E.K., Weih, M., 2005. Nitrogen storage and seasonal nitrogen cycling in *Populus*: bridging molecular physiology and ecophysiology. *New Phytol.* 167, 19–30. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2005.01451.x>
- Cowling, S. a, Sykes, M.T., 1999. Physiological significance of low atmospheric CO_2 for plant–climate interactions. *Quat. Res.* 52, 237–242. <https://doi.org/10.1006/qres.1999.2065>
- Cowling, S. A., Sage, R.F., 1998. Interactive effects of low atmospheric CO_2 and elevated temperature on growth, photosynthesis and respiration in *Phaseolus vulgaris*. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 21, 427–435. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00290.x>
- Cruz, C., Egsgaard, H., Trujillo, C., Ambus, P., Requena, N., Martins-Loução, M.A., Jakobsen, I., 2007. Enzymatic evidence for the key role of arginine in nitrogen translocation by arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi. *Plant Physiol.* 144, 782–792. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.101.3.865>
- Cui, M., Caldwell, M.M., 1996. Facilitation of plant phosphate acquisition by arbuscular mycotrhizas from enriched soil patches. I. Roots and hyphae exploiting the same soil volume. *New Phytol.* 133, 453–460. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469->

8137.1996.tb01912.x

- Cui, Y., Schubert, B.A., 2016. Quantifying uncertainty of past pCO₂ determined from changes in C₃ plant carbon isotope fractionation. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 172, 127–138. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.GCA.2015.09.032>
- Declerck, S., Strullu, D.G., Plenchette, C., 1998. Monoxenic culture of the intraradical forms of *Glomus* sp. isolated from a tropical ecosystem: A proposed methodology for germplasm collection. *Mycologia* 90, 579. <https://doi.org/10.2307/3761216>
- Del-Saz, N.F., Romero-Munar, A., Alonso, D., Aroca, R., Baraza, E., Flexas, J., Ribas-Carbo, M., 2017. Respiratory ATP cost and benefit of arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis with *Nicotiana tabacum* at different growth stages and under salinity. *J. Plant Physiol.* 218, 243–248. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jplph.2017.08.012>
- Eissenstat, D.M., Graham, J.H., Syvertsen, J.P., Drouillard, D.L., 1993. Carbon economy of sour orange in relation to mycorrhizal colonization and phosphorus status. *Ann. Bot.* 71, 1–10. <https://doi.org/10.1006/ANBO.1993.1001>
- Evans, R.D., 2001. Physiological mechanisms influencing plant nitrogen isotope composition. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 121–126. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(01\)01889-1](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(01)01889-1)
- Fahey, C., Winter, K., Slot, M., Kitajima, K., 2016. Influence of arbuscular mycorrhizal colonization on whole-plant respiration and thermal acclimation of tropical tree seedlings. *Ecol. Evol.* 6, 859–870. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.1952>
- Fellbaum, C.R., Gachomo, E.W., Beesetty, Y., Choudhari, S., Strahan, G.D., Pfeffer, P.E., Kiers, E.T., Bücking, H., 2012. Carbon availability triggers fungal nitrogen uptake and transport in arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 109, 2666–2671. <https://doi.org/10.1073/PNAS.1118650109>
- Franks, P.J., Adams, M.A., Amthor, J.S., Barbour, M.M., Berry, J.A., Ellsworth, D.S., Farquhar, G.D., Ghannoum, O., Lloyd, J., McDowell, N., Norby, R.J., Tissue, D.T., von Caemmerer, S., 2013. Sensitivity of plants to changing atmospheric CO₂ concentration: From the geological past to the next century. *New Phytol.* 197, 1077–1094. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.12104>
- Gamper, H., Peter, M., Jansa, J., Luscher, A., Hartwig, U.A., Leuchtmann, A., 2004. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi benefit from 7 years of free air CO₂ enrichment in well-fertilized grass and legume monocultures. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 10, 189–199. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1529-8817.2003.00734.x>
- Gavito, M.E., Jakobsen, I., Mikkelsen, T.N., Mora, F., 2019. Direct evidence for modulation of photosynthesis by an arbuscular mycorrhiza-induced carbon sink strength. *New Phytol.* nph.15806. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15806>
- Gerhart, L.M., Ward, J.K., 2010. Plant responses to low [CO₂] of the past. *New Phytol.*

- 188, 674–695. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2010.03441.x>
- Giovannetti, M., Mosse, B., 1980. An evaluation of techniques for measuring mycorrhizal infections in roots. *New Phytol.* 84, 489–500. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.1980.tb04556.x>
- Govindarajulu, M., Pfeffer, P.E., Jin, H., Abubaker, J., Douds, D.D., Allen, J.W., Bücking, H., Lammers, P.J., Shachar-Hill, Y., 2005. Nitrogen transfer in the arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Nature* 435, 819–823. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature03610>
- Grocke, D.R., 2007. Carbon-isotope analyses of fossil plants as a chemostratigraphic and palaeoenvironmental tool. *Lethaia* 31, 1–13. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1502-3931.1998.tb00482.x>
- Hare, V.J., Loftus, E., Jeffrey, A., Ramsey, C.B., 2018. Atmospheric CO₂ effect on stable carbon isotope composition of terrestrial fossil archives. *Nat. Commun.* 9, 252. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41467-017-02691-x>
- He, X.-H., Critchley, C., Bledsoe, C., 2003. Nitrogen transfer within and between plants through common mycorrhizal networks (CMNs). *CRC. Crit. Rev. Plant Sci.* 22, 531–567. <https://doi.org/10.1080/713608315>
- Hoagland, D.R., Arnon, D.I., 1950. The water-culture method for growing plants without soil, 2nd edit. ed. Circular. California agricultural experiment stations.
- Hobbie, E.A., Ari, A.E., Ae, J., Trappe, J., 2005. Foliar and fungal ¹⁵N:¹⁴N ratios reflect development of mycorrhizae and nitrogen supply during primary succession: testing analytical models. *Oecologia* 146, 258–268. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00442-005-0208-z>
- Hobbie, E.A., Högberg, P., 2012. Nitrogen isotopes link mycorrhizal fungi and plants to nitrogen dynamics. *New Phytol.* 196, 367–382. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2012.04300.x>
- Hobbie, E.A., Macko, S.A., Shugart, H.H., 1999. Insights into nitrogen and carbon dynamics of ectomycorrhizal and saprotrophic fungi from isotopic evidence. *Oecologia* 118, 353–360. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420050736>
- Hodge, A., Fitter, A.H., 2010. Substantial nitrogen acquisition by arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi from organic material has implications for N cycling. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 107, 13754–13759. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1005874107>
- Holá, M., Ježek, M., Kušta, T., Košatová, M., 2015. Trophic discrimination factors of stable carbon and nitrogen isotopes in hair of corn fed wild boar. *PLoS One* 10, e0125042. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0125042>
- Jakobsen, I., Rosendahl, L., 1990. Carbon flow into soil and external hyphae from roots

of mycorrhizal cucumber plants, *New Phytol.*

- Johnson, N.C., Graham, J.H., Smith, F.A., 1997. Functioning of mycorrhizal associations along the mutualism-parasitism continuum. *New Phytologist* 135, 575–585.
- Karst, J., Marczak, L., Jones, M.D., Turkington, R., 2008. The mutualism–parasitism continuum in ectomycorrhizas: a quantitative assessment using meta-analysis. *Ecology* 89, 1032–1042. <https://doi.org/10.1890/07-0823.1>
- Kaschuk, G., Kuyper, T.W., Leffelaar, P.A., Hungria, M., Giller, K.E., 2009. Are the rates of photosynthesis stimulated by the carbon sink strength of rhizobial and arbuscular mycorrhizal symbioses? *Soil Biol. Biochem.* 41, 1233–1244. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.SOILBIO.2009.03.005>
- Klironomos, J.N., Ursic, M., Rillig, M., Allen, M.F., 1998. Interspecific differences in the response of arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi to *Artemisia tridentata* grown under elevated atmospheric CO₂. *New Phytol.* 138, 599–605. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.1998.00141.x>
- Krings, M., Taylor, T.N., Dotzler, N., 2013. Fossil evidence of the zygomycetous fungi. *Persoonia* 30, 1–10. <https://doi.org/10.3767/003158513X664819>
- Lipp, J., Trimborn, P., Fritz, P., Moser, H., Becker, B., Frenzel, B., 1991. Stable isotopes in tree ring cellulose and climatic change. *Tellus B* 43, 322–330. <https://doi.org/10.1034/j.1600-0889.1991.t01-2-00005.x>
- Lovelock, C.E., Kyllö, D., Winter, K., 1996. Growth responses to vesicular-arbuscular mycorrhizae and elevated CO₂ in seedlings of a tropical tree, *Beilschmiedia pendula*. *Funct. Ecol.* 10, 662–667.
- Lukac, M., Calfapietra, C., Godbold, D.L., 2003. Production, turnover and mycorrhizal colonization of root systems of three *Populus* species grown under elevated CO₂ (POPFACE). *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 9, 838–848. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2486.2003.00582.x>
- Maherali, H., Oberle, B., Stevens, P.F., Cornwell, W.K., Mcglinn, D.J., 2016. Mutualism persistence and abandonment during the evolution of the mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Am. Nat.* 188, E113–E125. <https://doi.org/10.5061/dryad.n8bm9>
- Millard, P., 1988. The accumulation and storage of nitrogen by herbaceous plants, *Plant, Cell and Environment* 11, 1-8.
- Miller, R.M., Miller, S.P., Jastrow, J.D., Rivetta, C.B., 2002. Mycorrhizal mediated feedbacks influence net carbon gain and nutrient uptake in *Andropogon gerardii*. *New Phytol.* 155, 149–162. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.2002.00429.x>
- Minagawa, M., Wada, E., 1984. Stepwise enrichment of ¹⁵N along food chains: Further evidence and the relation between $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and animal age. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta*

48, 1135–1140. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037\(84\)90204-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037(84)90204-7)

- Mohan, J.E., Cowden, C.C., Baas, P., Dawadi, A., Frankson, P.T., Helmick, K., Hughes, E., Khan, S., Lang, A., Machmuller, M., Taylor, M., Witt, C.A., 2014. Mycorrhizal fungi mediation of terrestrial ecosystem responses to global change: Mini-review. *Fungal Ecol.* 10, 3–19. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.funeco.2014.01.005>
- Newsham, K.K., Fitter, A.H., Watkinson, A.R., 1995. Multi-functionality and biodiversity in arbuscular mycorrhizas. *Trends Ecol. Evol.* 10, 407–411. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347\(00\)89157-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(00)89157-0)
- Nylund, J.-E., Kasimir, A., Arveby, A.S., Unestam, T., 1982. Simple diagnosis of ectomycorrhiza formation and demonstration of the architecture of the Hartig net by means of a clearing technique. *For. Pathol.* 12, 103–107. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1439-0329.1982.tb01379.x>
- O’Leary, M.H., 1981. Carbon isotope fractionation in plants. *Phytochemistry* 20, 553–567.
- Öpik, M., Moora, M., Liira, J., Zobel, M., 2006. Composition of root-colonizing arbuscular mycorrhizal fungal communities in different ecosystems around the globe. *J. Ecol.* 94, 778–790. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2745.2006.01136.x>
- Pardo, L.H., Semaoune, P., Schaberg, P.G., Eagar, C., Sebiló, M., 2013. Patterns in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in roots, stems, and leaves of sugar maple and American beech seedlings, saplings, and mature trees. *Biogeochemistry* 112, 275–291. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10533-012-9724-1>
- Parrent, J.L., Morris, W.F., Vilgalys, R., 2006. CO_2 -enrichment and nutrient availability alter ectomycorrhizal fungal communities. *Ecology* 87, 2278–2287. [https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658\(2006\)87\[2278:CANAAE\]2.0.CO;2](https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658(2006)87[2278:CANAAE]2.0.CO;2)
- Parrent, J.L., Vilgalys, R., 2007. Biomass and compositional responses of ectomycorrhizal fungal hyphae to elevated CO_2 and nitrogen fertilization. *New Phytol.* 176, 164–174. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2007.02155.x>
- Perkins, M.J., Robbie, A.M., van Frank, F.J., Kelly, S.D., Rees, G., Bearhop, S., 2014. Application of nitrogen and carbon stable isotopes ($\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and $\delta^{13}\text{C}$) to quantify food chain length and trophic structure. *PLoS One* 9, e93281.
- Perry, L., Michael Quigg, J., 2011. Starch remains and stone boiling in the Texas Panhandle part II: Identifying Wildrye (*Elymus* spp.). *Plains Anthropol.* 56, 109–119. <https://doi.org/10.1179/pan.2011.011>
- Petit, R.J., Raynaud, D., Basile, I., Chappellaz, J., Ritz, C., Delmotte, M., Legrand, M., Lorius, C., Pe, L., 1999. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature* 399, 429–413. <https://doi.org/10.1038/20859>

- Phillips, J.M., Hayman, D.S., 1970. Improved procedures for clearing roots and staining parasitic and vesicular-arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi for rapid assessment of infection. *Trans. Br. Mycol. Soc.* 55, 158-181.
- Post, D.M., 2002. Using stable isotopes to estimate trophic position: Models, methods, and assumptions. *Ecology* 83, 703–718. [https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658\(2002\)083\[0703:USITET\]2.0.CO;2](https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658(2002)083[0703:USITET]2.0.CO;2)
- Querejeta, J.I., Allen, M.F., Caravaca, F., Roldán, A., 2006. Differential modulation of host plant $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{18}\text{O}$ by native and nonnative arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi in a semiarid environment. *New Phytol.* 169, 379–387. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2005.01599.x>
- R Core Team, 2013. *R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing.*
- Rapparini, F., Baraldi, R., Bertazza, G., Branzanti, B., Predieri, S., 1994. Vesicular-arbuscular mycorrhizal inoculation of micropropagated fruit trees. *J. Hortic. Sci.* 69, 1101–1109. <https://doi.org/10.1080/00221589.1994.11516551>
- Reichgelt, T., D’Andrea, W.J., 2019. Plant carbon assimilation rates in atmospheric CO_2 reconstructions. *New Phytol.* 191, 15914. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15914>
- Rillig, M.C., Allen, M.F., Klironomos, J.N., Chiariello, N.R., Field, C.B., 1998. Plant species-specific changes in root-inhabiting fungi in a California annual grassland: responses to elevated CO_2 and nutrients. *Oecologia* 113, 252–259. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420050376>
- Rillig, M.C., Field, C.B., Allen, M.F., 1999. Soil biota responses to long-term atmospheric CO_2 enrichment in two California annual grasslands. *Oecologia* 119, 572–577
- Romero-Munar, A., Fernández Del-Saz, N., Ribas-Carbó, M., Flexas, J., Baraza, E., Florez-Sarasa, I., Fernie, A.R., Gulías, J., 2017. Arbuscular mycorrhizal symbiosis with *Arundo donax* decreases root respiration and increases both photosynthesis and plant biomass accumulation. *Plant. Cell Environ.* <https://doi.org/10.1111/pce.12902>
- Saia, S., Amato, G., Frenda, A.S., Giambalvo, D., Ruisi, P., 2014. Influence of arbuscular mycorrhizae on biomass production and nitrogen fixation of Berseem clover plants subjected to water stress. *PLoS One* 9, e90738. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0090738>
- Saravesi, K., Ruotsalainen, A.L., Cahill, J.F., 2014. Contrasting impacts of defoliation on root colonization by arbuscular mycorrhizal and dark septate endophytic fungi of *Medicago sativa*. *Mycorrhiza* 24, 239–245. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00572-013-0536-5>
- Smith, F.A., Grace, E.J., Smith, S.E., 2009. More than a carbon economy: Nutrient trade and ecological sustainability in facultative arbuscular mycorrhizal symbioses. *New*

- Phytol. 182, 347–358. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2008.02753.x>
- Smith, S., Gianinazzi-Pearson, V., 1990. Phosphate uptake and arbuscular activity in mycorrhizal *Allium cepa* L.: Effects of photon irradiance and phosphate nutrition. *Funct. Plant Biol.* 17, 177. <https://doi.org/10.1071/PP9900177>
- Smith, S.E., Read, D., 2008. Mycorrhizal Symbiosis, in: Mycorrhizal Symbiosis Third Edition Introduction. Academic Press, Amsterdam, pp. 1–9
- Staswick, P.E., 1994. Storage proteins of vegetative tissues. *Annu. Rev. Plant Physiol. Plant Mol. Biol.* 45, 303–325.
- Strullu-Derrien, C., Strullu, D.-G., 2007. Mycorrhization of fossil and living plants. *Comptes Rendus Palevol* 6, 483–494. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.CRPV.2007.09.006>
- Subramanian, K.S., Charest, C., 1998. Arbuscular mycorrhizae and nitrogen assimilation in maize after drought and recovery. *Physiol. Plant.* 102, 285–296. <https://doi.org/10.1034/j.1399-3054.1998.1020217.x>
- Tahmasebi, F., Longstaffe, F.J., Zazula, G., 2018. Nitrogen isotopes suggest a change in nitrogen dynamics between the Late Pleistocene and modern time in Yukon, Canada. *PLoS One* 13, e0192713. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0192713>
- Tahmasebi, F., Longstaffe, F.J., Zazula, G., Bennett, B., 2017. Nitrogen and carbon isotopic dynamics of subarctic soils and plants in southern Yukon Territory and its implications for paleoecological and paleodietary studies. *PLoS One* 12, e0183016. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0183016>
- Tang, J., Xu, L., Chen, X., Hu, S., 2009. Interaction between *C₄* barnyard grass and *C₃* upland rice under elevated CO₂: Impact of mycorrhizae. *Acta Oecologica* 35, 227–235. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.ACTAO.2008.10.005>
- Taylor, T.N., Krings, M., Taylor, E.L., 2015. Fungal diversity in the fossil record, in: *Systematics and Evolution*. Springer Berlin Heidelberg, Berlin, Heidelberg, pp. 259–278. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-662-46011-5_10
- Tissue, D., Griffin, K., Thomas, R., Strain, B., 1995. Effects of low and elevated CO₂ on *C₃* and *C₄* annuals -II. Photosynthesis and leaf biochemistry. *Oecologia* 101, 21–28
- Tobar, R., Azcon, R., Barea, J.M., 1994. Improved nitrogen uptake and transport from ¹⁵N-labelled nitrate by external hyphae of arbuscular mycorrhiza under water-stressed conditions. *New Phytol.* 126, 119–122. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.1994.tb07536.x>
- Van Der Heijden, M.G.A., 2004. Arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi as support systems for seedling establishment in grassland. *Ecol. Lett.* 7, 293–303. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1461-0248.2004.00577.x>

- Wright, D.P., Read, D.J., Scholes, J.D., 1998a. Mycorrhizal sink strength influences whole plant carbon balance of *Trifolium repens* L. *Plant. Cell Environ.* 21, 881–891. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00351.x>
- Wright, D.P., Scholes, J.D., Read, D.J., 1998b. Effects of VA mycorrhizal colonization on photosynthesis and biomass production of *Trifolium repens* L. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 21, 209–216. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00280.x>
- Yoneyama, T., Handley, L.L., Scrimgeour, C.M., Fisher, D.B., Raven, J.A., 1997. Variations of the natural abundances of nitrogen and carbon isotopes in *Triticum aestivum*, with special reference to phloem and xylem exudates. *New Phytol.* 137, 205–213
- Zazula, Grant D., Schweger, C.E., Beaudoin, A.B., McCourt, G.H., 2006. Macrofossil and pollen evidence for full-glacial steppe within an ecological mosaic along the Bluefish River, eastern Beringia. *Quat. Int.* 142–143, 2–19. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.QUAINT.2005.03.010>

Chapter 4

4 Low growth CO₂ concentrations of the past decrease plant chemical defense production

4.1 Abstract

Growth at the low atmospheric CO₂ concentrations that dominated most of the recent geological past is known to decrease plant growth. It is unknown, however, how plants balanced carbon investment between primary functions to sustain growth and the production of secondary metabolites, such as defense compounds. Here, we present the first investigation contrasting plant growth and formation of chemical defense components (resin ducts and terpenes) between plants grown at current (400 ppm) and low CO₂ concentrations representative of the Last Glacial Maximum (180 ppm). *Picea mariana* grown at low CO₂ conditions had reduced biomass as well as lower photosynthetic and respiratory rates in comparison to ambient CO₂-grown plants. Needles of low-CO₂ grown plants had reduced resin duct area, and in some cases, lacked one or both ducts. Growth at C-limited conditions also decreased the production of the major monoterpenes produced by *P. mariana*, particularly α -pinene. Thus, plants growing at past low CO₂ conditions may have had a reduced capability to deter herbivory compared to modern plants. Furthermore, the absence of resin ducts poses new complexities to using this indicator in paleo-reconstructions, as the structural characteristics of resin ducts and their number are commonly used in species identification of conifer fossils.

4.2 Introduction

Plants must balance carbon investment between primary functions to sustain growth and the production of secondary metabolites, such as defense compounds, which enhance

plant fitness (Baldwin, 2010; Hartmann, 1996; Holopainen, 2004). Carbon, and thus energy, availability for these important functions depends directly on leaf carbon fluxes (*i.e.*, photosynthesis, respiration, and photorespiration), and is therefore influenced by atmospheric CO₂ concentrations (Drake *et al.*, 1997; Dusenge *et al.*, 2018; Williams *et al.*, 2018). Since atmospheric CO₂ levels are predicted to increase in the near future (Ciais *et al.*, 2013), considerable effort has been put into understanding the effects of elevated CO₂ on plant growth and chemical defense (*e.g.*, Mohan *et al.*, 2006; Noctor and Mhamdi, 2017; Penuelas *et al.*, 1997; Zavala *et al.*, 2012). However, throughout the recent evolutionary history of plants, CO₂ concentrations have been far below the levels observed today, being as low as 180 ppm 20,000 years ago by the end of the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM; Petit *et al.*, 1999). These low CO₂ conditions that prevailed for the last millennia may still influence how plants respond to future changes in CO₂ levels (Becklin *et al.*, 2017; Gerhart and Ward, 2010; Sage and Cowling, 1999).

By reducing substrate availability, low CO₂ environments decrease photosynthesis, while enhancing photorespiration (Sage and Coleman, 2001). Low photosynthetic rates limit plant growth and plants grown at low CO₂ have reduced biomass compared to plants grown at current CO₂ conditions (Ripley *et al.*, 2013; Sage and Cowling, 1999; Temme *et al.*, 2013). How changes in growth CO₂ affect the production of defense compounds, however, is far from fully understood. Plants grown at elevated CO₂ have shown increased (Coley *et al.*, 2002; Penuelas *et al.*, 1997), decreased (Sallas *et al.*, 2003; Vannette and Hunter, 2011), or unchanged (Constable *et al.*, 1999; Heyworth *et al.*, 1998) defense compound production compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants. While these studies provide insight into how plants may respond to future climates, so far, no studies have investigated how the production of defense compounds is affected by growth at the low CO₂ conditions of the past. Models developed by Schurgers *et al.* (2009) predicted that plant emissions of terpenes and other volatile organic compounds may have risen since the LGM as vegetation cover changed with increasing temperature and CO₂. This hypothesis, however, has not yet been tested.

Low carbon availability could suppress the production of carbon-based compounds such as terpenes, the largest family of natural plant chemicals (Langenheim, 1994), which

have antibacterial (Dorman and Deans, 2000), antifungal (Cheng *et al.*, 2004), and insect-deterrent properties (Boulogne *et al.*, 2012). As terpenes form the majority of compounds found in tree resin (Langenheim, 1990), a decline in terpene synthesis at low CO₂ might also reduce resin production and alter resin duct structure in conifers. Resin ducts are specialized anatomical structures that accumulate resin terpenes, and in conifers, their density and size can serve as indicators of chemical defense production and host resistance against herbivory and pathogens (Boucher *et al.*, 2001; Martin *et al.*, 2002; Tomlin and Borden, 1997). Resin ducts are also used to identify plant fossil samples (Falcon-Lang *et al.*, 2016; Manum *et al.*, 2000; Zidianakis *et al.*, 2016), and differences in these structures between plants grown at modern and low CO₂ levels of the past could therefore have implication for paleo-ecological inferences. For instance, Zazula *et al.* (2006) identified conifer needles more than 20,000 years-old as belonging to ancient *Picea mariana* or *P. glauca* based on whether the fossil needles contained one or two resin ducts. Furthermore, investigating the ability of plants to produce defense compounds at low CO₂ conditions could also inform us of plant susceptibility to herbivory in ancient environments. Changes in CO₂ concentrations have been hypothesized to contribute to faunal extinctions (Graham and Lundelius Jr, 1984; Guthrie, 1984, 2003), but whether rising CO₂ since the LGM could have increased plant chemical defense traits and thereby impacted herbivores by increasing food toxicity is unclear.

To evaluate how growth at past low CO₂ concentrations alters carbon allocation to growth and defense, we grew black spruce (*Picea mariana*) in current CO₂ conditions and CO₂ levels found at the end of the LGM. Black spruce was present, and has persisted, in North American forests since the LGM (Prentice *et al.*, 1991; G. D. Zazula *et al.*, 2006). As carbon availability is reduced at low CO₂, we assessed changes in biomass and photosynthetic potential, as we expected a decline in the ability of low CO₂-grown plants to fix carbon via photosynthesis. We hypothesized that decreased photosynthesis would limit terpene defense production, which would be reflected in reduced resin duct area in low CO₂ needles compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants.

4.3 Methods

4.3.1 Experimental design and plant material

Four growth chambers (GCW15, Environmental Growth Chambers, Chagrin Falls, OH, USA) were divided into two CO₂ treatments: in two chambers, CO₂ concentrations were maintained at current, ambient conditions (AC), and the other two chambers were set at low CO₂ levels (LC). CO₂ concentrations averaged 400 ± 0.6 ppm in AC chambers and 184 ± 1.1 ppm in LC chambers (means \pm SE). CO₂ levels in the chambers were regulated by a CO₂ scrubbing system consisting of an acrylic box filled with soda lime to absorb CO₂ from the air. Fans were attached to the box's lid and controlled by a CO₂ analyzer (LI-820, LI-COR, NB, USA) coupled with a DIN process controller (Omega CN7633, Omega Engineering, QC, Canada). Environmental conditions in the growth chambers were maintained at a relative humidity of 73 ± 0.3 %, photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) of 284 ± 0.2 $\mu\text{mol photons m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, a photoperiod of 14 hours, day air temperature of 21 ± 0.1 °C, and night temperatures of 12 ± 0.1 °C (means \pm SE). Day length and air temperatures were chosen to emulate average growing season conditions of the last three years at the site where seeds were collected (obtained from Environment Canada, Gore Bay Climate Station).

Black spruce (*Picea mariana*) seeds were obtained from the Canadian National Tree Seed Centre (from seed zone 27; 46.250000 °E, -82.50000 °N) and sown in 2-gallon pots filled with soil (Pro-Mix BX Mycorrhizae, Premier Tech Horticulture, Rivière-du-Loup, QC, Canada). Each chamber contained eighteen pots that were rotated weekly to minimize intra-chamber effects. Plants were watered three times per week (200 ml per pot) and fertilized weekly using a half-strength Hoagland's recipe (Hoagland and Arnon, 1950). Once the plants had grown for six months, I measured gas exchange, biomass, leaf microscopy, and terpene composition.

4.3.2 Gas exchange measurements

Net CO₂ assimilation rates (A_{net}) at growth CO₂ (A_{growth}) and at 400 ppm CO₂ (A_{400}), as well as stomatal conductance at growth CO₂ and at 400 ppm CO₂ ($g_{s-growth}$ and g_{s-400} , respectively), were measured on 5-6 seedlings per chamber per replicate using a portable photosynthesis system (Walz GFS-3000, Effeltrich, Germany). The response of A_{net} to intercellular CO₂ concentrations (C_i) was also measured to derive maximum Rubisco carboxylation rates (V_{cmax}) and maximum electron transport rates (J_{max}), following the photosynthetic model of Farquhar *et al.* (1980). Response curves were initiated after equilibrating the leaves for approximately 10 minutes at a CO₂ concentration of 400 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$, which was then changed to 300, 180, 100, 60, 400, 600, 800, 1000, 1200, 1500, and back to 400 $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$. Before being measured, leaves were maintained at each CO₂ level until a stable A_{net} was achieved. Cuvette conditions included a 21 °C leaf temperature, 750 $\mu\text{mol s}^{-1}$ flow rate, a relative humidity of 60 %, and an irradiance of 1400 $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$, which was established as light-saturated based on light-response curves (data not shown). Gas exchange values were corrected for the actual leaf area measured by harvesting the needles inside the cuvette, photographing them, and estimating their projected-leaf area using ImageJ 1.48v (Schneider *et al.*, 2012). All gas exchange data are presented on a projected leaf area basis. Values of V_{cmax} and J_{max} were calculated in R 3.2.1 (R Core Team, 2013) using the package ‘*plantecophys*’ (Duursma, 2015). Once the CO₂ response curves were finished, the cuvette lights were switched off, while maintaining the remaining cuvette conditions, and plants were left to acclimate to dark conditions for at least 20 minutes until a stable A_{net} was achieved in order to measure dark respiration (R_d).

4.3.3 Biomass

Needles, stems, and roots of 5-6 seedlings per chamber per replicate were separated and dried at 60 °C until a constant mass was achieved. Needle surface area was estimated

from digital images (ImageJ 1.48v - Schneider *et al.*, 2012). The ratio of leaf area to leaf dry weight was used to calculate specific leaf area (SLA).

4.3.4 Resin duct microscopy

At harvest, a subsample of needles was immediately fixed for microscopy analysis of resin ducts from 5-6 seedlings per chamber per replicate. In small plants from the LC treatment that had few needles, all needles were harvested, while in seedlings with abundant needles, needles were randomly harvested at different heights along the main stem. Needles were stored in 4 % paraformaldehyde buffered with 0.2 M phosphate containing 0.3 M sucrose, and refrigerated. After a week, needles were rinsed in phosphate buffer, and trimmed using a razor blade such that only the middle section (approximately 5 mm in length) of the needle remained. Samples were processed by soaking in 95 % ethanol and 5 % methanol solutions, and fixed with Paraplast X-tra wax (Sigma-Aldrich, Oakville, ON).

The paraffin-embedded needles were trimmed into 10 μm -thick sections using a rotary microtome and mounted on Superfrost Plus poly-L-lysine-coated slides (Thermo Fisher Scientific, Waltham, MA, USA). Slides were deparaffinized in a series of xylene baths, rehydrated, and equilibrated to Invitrogen phosphate-buffered saline (Thermo Fisher Scientific, Waltham, MA, USA). Samples were stained with a 0.001 % solution of Streptavidin Alexa Fluor 633 fluorescent stain (Thermo Fisher Scientific, Waltham, MA, USA) and a Calcofluor White/Evans blue dye counterstain (Sigma Aldrich, Oakville, ON). Visualization and estimation of resin duct lumen area were done using an AxioImager Z1 Upright Fluorescence Microscope (Carl Zeiss Ltd., North York, ON).

4.3.5 Monoterpene and diterpene analysis

Fully mature needles were collected from all seedlings (5-6 seedlings per chamber per replicate), immediately frozen in liquid nitrogen and stored at $-80\text{ }^{\circ}\text{C}$ until analysis. For extraction, needles were cut with a razor blade into ~ 2 mm pieces, and extracted with

methyl-tert-butyl ether MTBE, containing 5 $\mu\text{g mL}^{-1}$ dichlorodehydroabietic acid and 50 $\mu\text{g mL}^{-1}$ isobutyl benzene as internal standards, for 16 h at room temperature. After extraction, needle tissue was removed by centrifugation, and the extract was split in two and transferred into a vial for monoterpene analysis and a vial for diterpene analysis as described by Robert *et al.*, (2010). The monoterpene fraction was washed with 0.3 mL of 100 ammonium carbonate $(\text{NH}_4)_2\text{CO}_3$, (pH 8.0). The diterpene fraction was derivatized with 2 mM trimethylsilyldiazomethane in diethyl ether (Sigma Aldrich, Oakville, ON).

Monoterpenes were analyzed on an Agilent HP-5 column (5 % phenyl methyl siloxane, diameter = 250 μm , length = 30 m, and film thickness = 0.25 μm) at 0.8 mL min^{-1} He on an Agilent 6890A system GC, Agilent 7683 series GC Sampler, and an Agilent 5973 Mass Selective Detector at 70 eV. The GC temperature program was as follows: 40 $^{\circ}\text{C}$ for 4 min, increase at 6 $^{\circ}\text{C min}^{-1}$ to 90 $^{\circ}\text{C}$, followed by increase at 9 $^{\circ}\text{C min}^{-1}$ to 310 $^{\circ}\text{C}$ and hold for 4 min with split injections at a ratio 5:1 an injector held at 240 $^{\circ}\text{C}$. Diterpenes were analyzed using an Agilent AT-1000 column at 0.9 mL min^{-1} helium on an Agilent 7890A system GC, Agilent GC Sampler 80, and a 7000A GC/MS triple quad M5975C inert XL MSD with triple axis detector at 70 eV. The GC temperature program was as follows: 150 $^{\circ}\text{C}$ for 1 min, increase at 0.6 $^{\circ}\text{C min}^{-1}$ to 180 $^{\circ}\text{C}$, 25 $^{\circ}\text{C min}^{-1}$ to 240 $^{\circ}\text{C}$, hold for 5 min with pulsed splitless injector held at 250 $^{\circ}\text{C}$.

Integration of the peaks from the GC-MS was performed using Hewlett Packard Chemstation software. Relative amounts of monoterpenes and diterpenes were calculated by comparing the integrated peak area with the area of the internal standards, followed by normalization by the amount of tissue used in each extraction. Identification of terpenes was based on comparison of retention times and mass spectra with authentic standards or with mass spectra in the Wiley library.

4.3.6 Statistical analysis

Growth, gas exchange parameters, resin duct area, total mono and diterpene abundances, as well as individual terpene abundance were analyzed with a one-way ANOVA to assess growth CO_2 effects. The effect of growth CO_2 on the presence and absence of resin ducts

was analyzed using a binominal logistic regression. Results are shown as means \pm standard error. Data analysis was performed in R 3.2.1 (R Core Team, 2013).

4.4 Results

4.4.1 Biomass

Growth at low CO₂ greatly decreased plant biomass. The above- and below-ground biomass of LC plants were reduced 72 and 74 %, respectively, leading to a 73 % decrease in total biomass in comparison to AC plants (Figure 4.1 and 4.2). LC plants increased allocation to leaves in relation to root biomass as the shoot/root ratio was 55 % greater in LC compared to AC plants (Figure 4.2). LC plants also invested in greater leaf area in relation to leaf mass, resulting in a 58 % increase in SLA in comparison to AC plants (Figure 4.2). The needle area of AC plants was also smaller than needles of AC plants by 59 % on average (Figure 4.2).



Figure 4.1 *Picea mariana* plants harvested at the end of the experiment. On the left side, a plant grown at ambient CO₂ conditions, and on the right, a low-CO₂ grown plant.

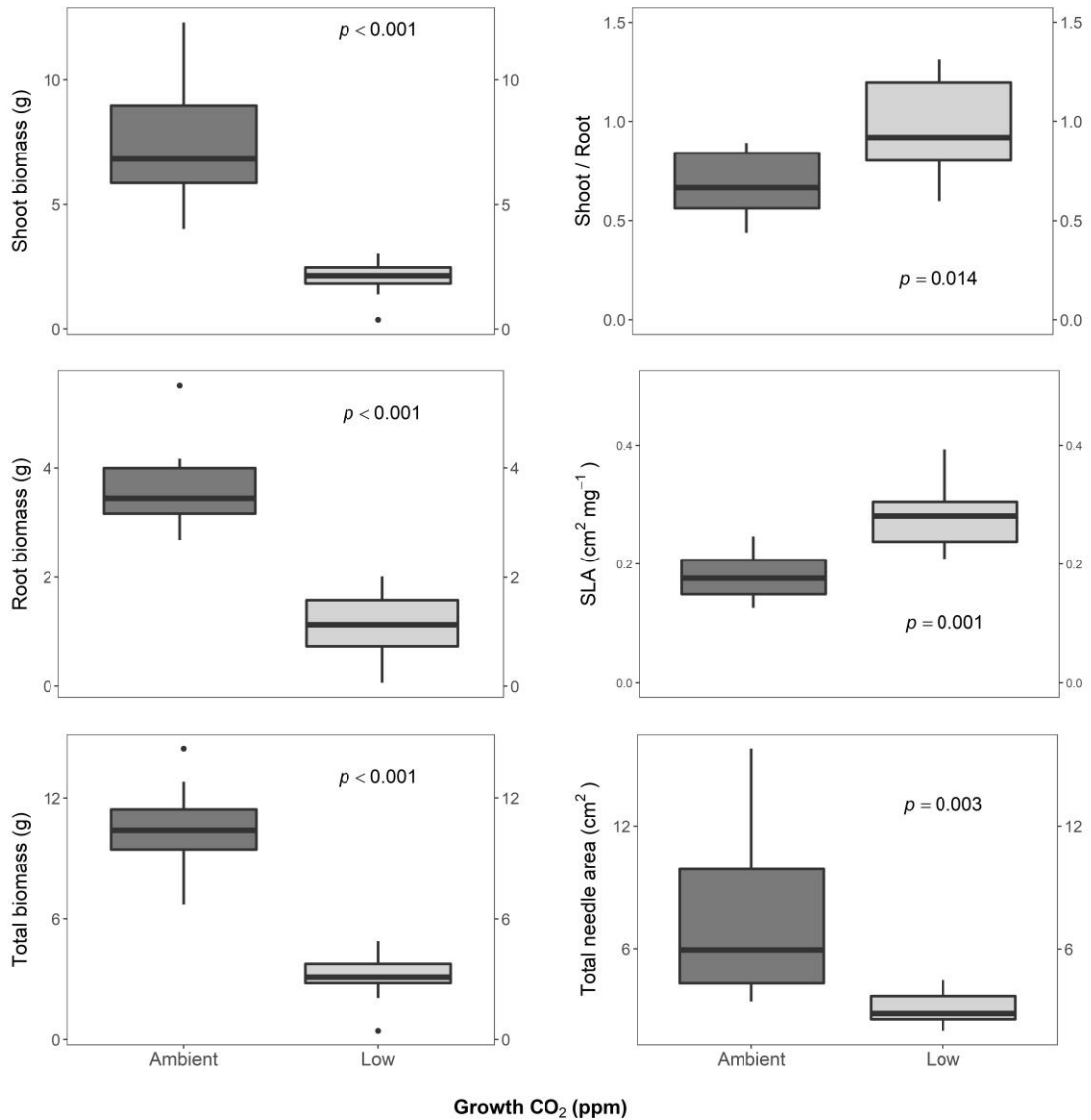


Figure 4.2. Plant biomass, Specific Leaf Area (SLA), and total leaf area: Shoot, root, and total biomass, shoot/root ratio, SLA, and total needle area of plants grown at ambient and low CO₂. The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$.

4.4.2 Gas-exchange parameters

The A_{net} measured at growth CO_2 (A_{growth}) of LC plants was almost half of those in AC plants (Figure 4.3), although values of A_{400} were similar in LC and AC plants (Figure 4.2). Stomatal conductance, either measured at growth CO_2 ($g_{s\text{-growth}}$) or at a common CO_2 of 400 ppm ($g_{s\text{-400}}$), did not differ between the CO_2 treatments (Figure 4.3). Growth CO_2 had no effect on V_{cmax} (Figure 4.4), but J_{max} was 38 % lower in LC plants in comparison to AC plants (Figure 4.4). However, the $V_{\text{cmax}} / J_{\text{max}}$ ratio was 29 % higher in LC compared to AC plants. The LC plants had 72 % lower R_d than AC plants (Figure 4.4), and the A_{growth}/R_d ratio was twice that of AC plants.

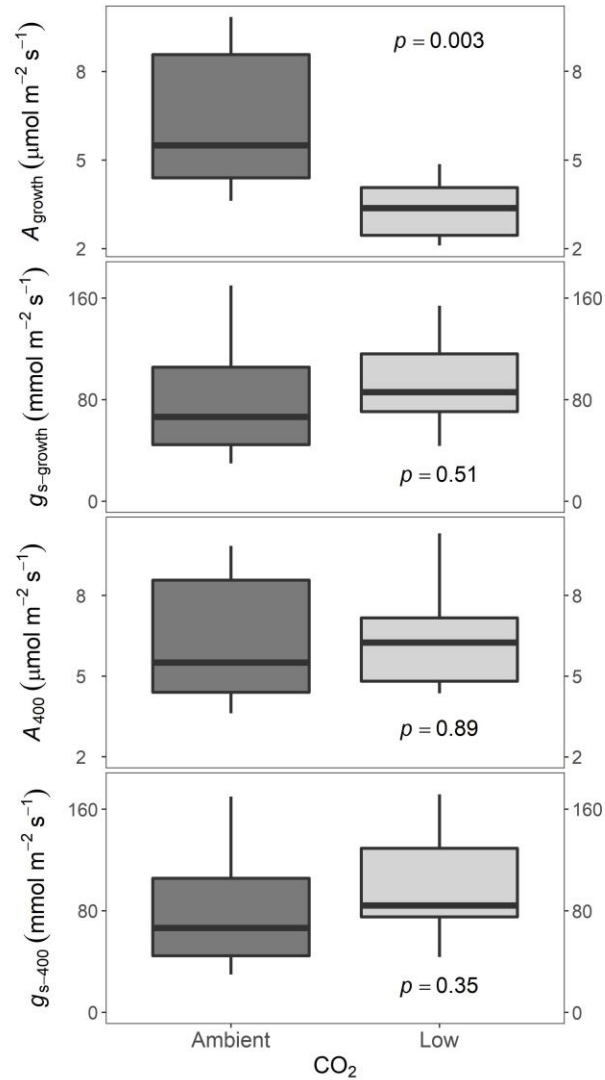


Figure 4.3. Net CO₂ assimilation rates (A) and stomatal conductance (g_s) measured at growth CO₂ (A_{growth} and $g_{\text{s-growth}}$) and at a common CO₂ concentration of 400 ppm (A_{400} and $g_{\text{s-400}}$). The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n= 10-12$.

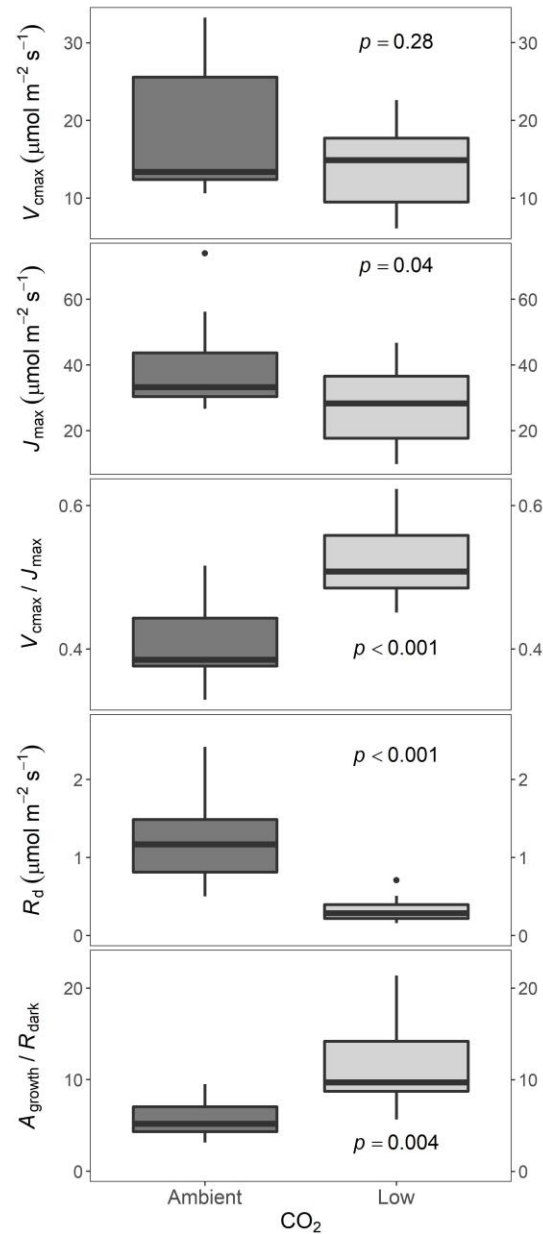


Figure 4.4. Maximum carboxylation (V_{cmax}) and electron transport (J_{max}) rates, the ratio between V_{cmax} and J_{max} , dark respiration (R_d), and the ratio between A_{growth} and R_d . The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$.

4.4.3 Resin duct anatomy

While both resin ducts were present in all needles of AC plants, 34 % of the needles from LC plants lacked either one or both resin ducts (Figure 4.5). The lumen area of the resin ducts in needles from LC plants that had ducts were ~50 % smaller than those in AC plants (Figure 4.6). We assessed whether this reduction in lumen area at LC was caused by a reduction in needle cross-sectional area (*i.e.*, whether resin ducts represented a similar proportion of the needle cross-sectional area in both CO₂ treatment). When the resin duct lumen area was considered in relation to the needle cross-sectional area, resin ducts of LC plants were still 54 % smaller than resin ducts from AC plants (Figure 4.6).

4.4.4 Mono and diterpenes

The most abundant monoterpenes observed were bornyl cetate, camphene and α -pinene. The diterpene profile was dominated by dehydroabietic acid, levopimaric acid, and palustric acid (Figure 4.7). Monoterpene abundance was lower in LC compared to AC plants ($p = 0.009$), with this difference being mostly driven by decreases in bornyl cetate and α -pinene (Figure 4.7). However, the normalized peak area of diterpenes was unaffected by the CO₂ treatment ($p = 0.37$).

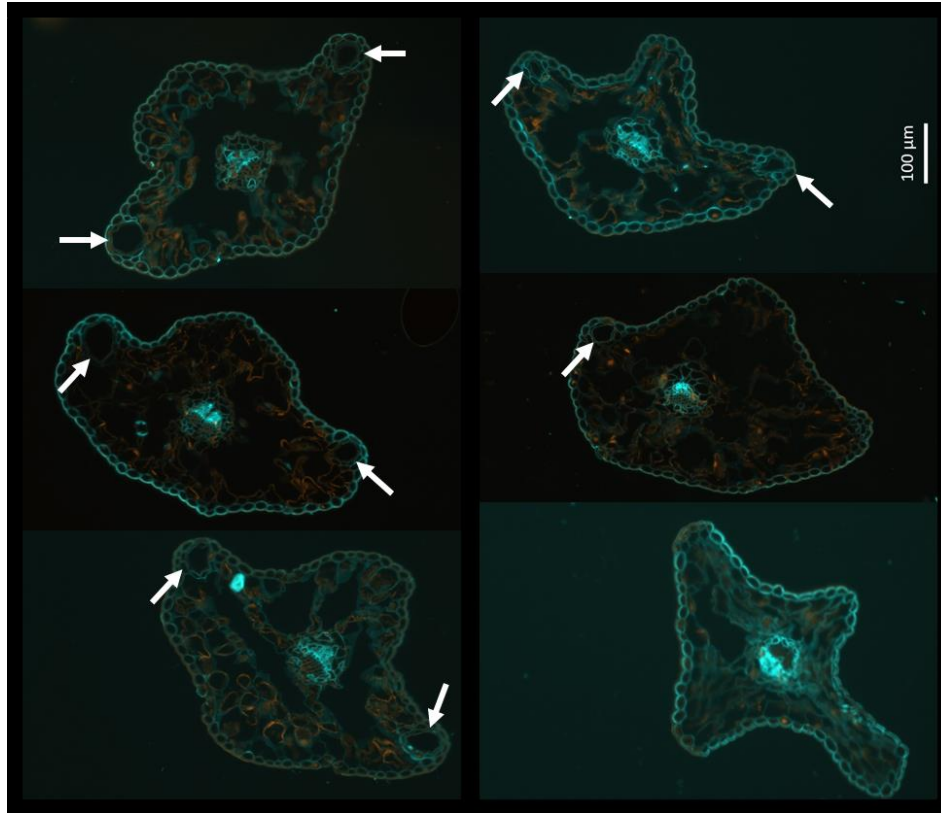


Figure 4.5. Needle cross-sections. Sections on the left side were obtained from needles of ambient CO₂-grown plants where both resin ducts are present. On the right side, needle cross-sections from low CO₂-grown plants display examples of where both resin ducts are present (upper), only one duct can be seen (middle), or a needle lacking both ducts (lower). Fluorescence microscopy at 100 μm.

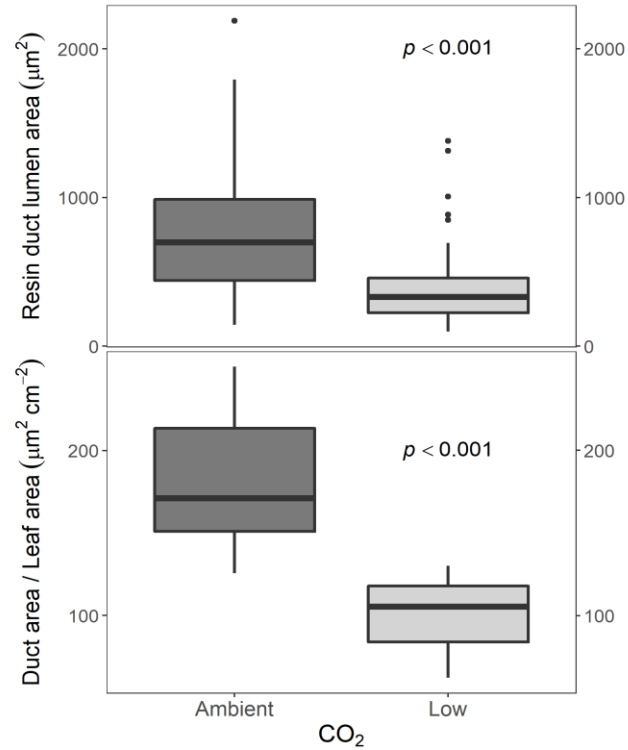


Figure 4.6. Resin duct lumen area and the ratio of resin duct area per total leaf area.

The p -values indicate growth CO₂ effects on the variables measured, considering a $p \leq 0.05$ as significant. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; $n = 10-12$.

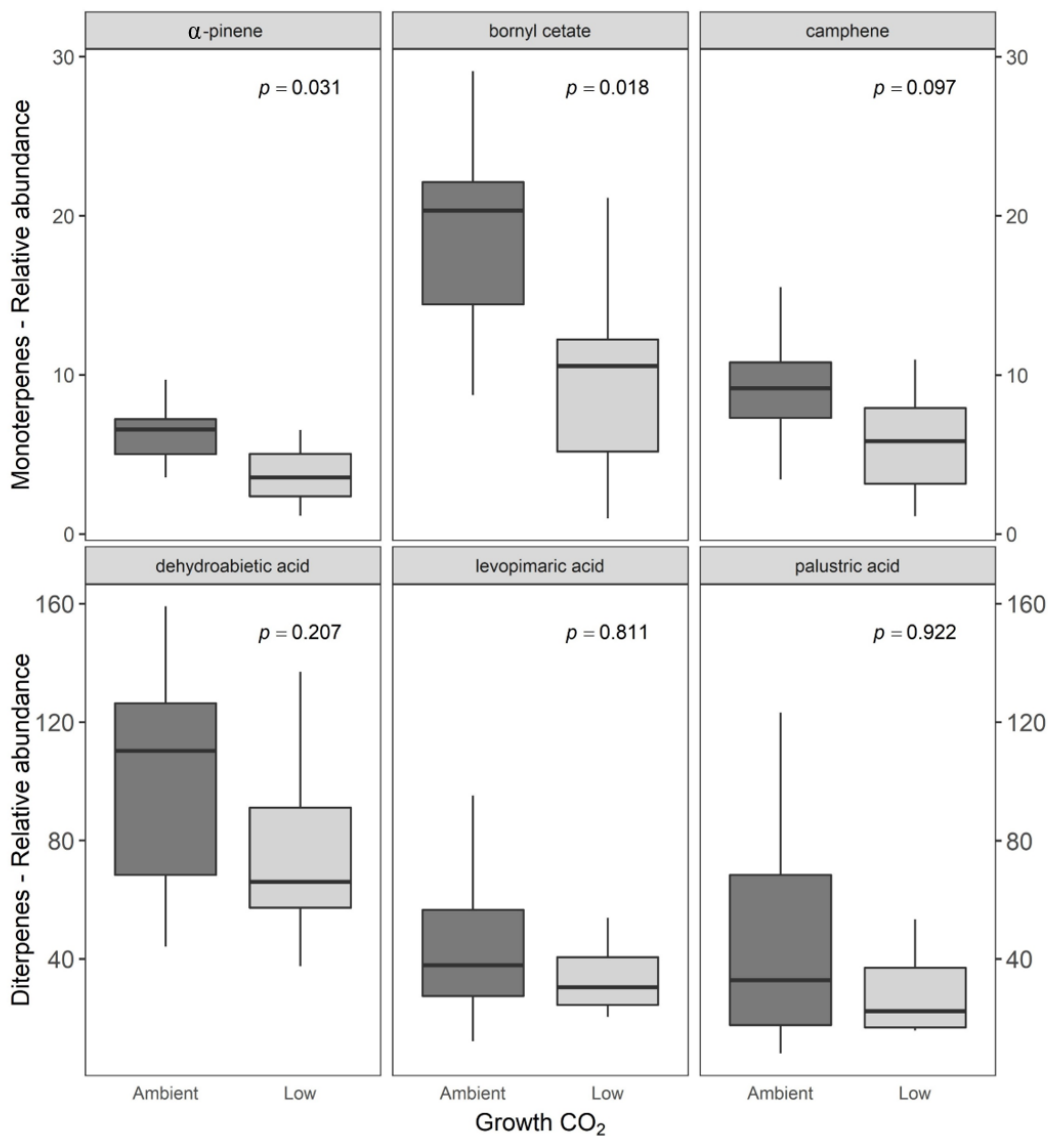


Figure 4.7. Relative abundance of mono and diterpenes measured to an internal standard. The central box plot rectangle spans the first to the third quartile segmented by the median; the whisker below is the minimum, and the whisker above the box, the maximum; points represent observations above 1.5 times the likely range of variation; n = 10-12.

4.5 Discussion

Growth in C-limited environments, such as past low CO₂ conditions, can constrain primary metabolism, with direct effects on plant growth. We tested whether low CO₂ effects would also suppress secondary metabolite production, specifically defense compound production. Indeed, not only was growth reduced, but resin duct size and terpene production were also reduced in plants grown at low CO₂ compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants.

4.5.1 Plant growth and carbon fluxes

Net photosynthetic rates at growth CO₂ were, unsurprisingly, greatly decreased in LC plants as a result of reduced CO₂ availability for photosynthesis. Reduced C assimilation in turn suppressed the growth of LC plants, an effect commonly observed in plants grown at sub-ambient CO₂ (Dippery *et al.*, 1995; Ehleringer *et al.*, 2005; Sage, 1995). The low C environment experienced by LC plants also stimulated greater allocation to leaves in relation to root biomass to increase total leaf area per tree for photosynthesis, resulting in higher SLA in LC compared to AC plants. The very low respiration rates of LC plants are likely related to both low C availability for supporting respiration, but also the low demand for respiratory products under a low growth rate environment. This is further supported by an increase in the ratio between photosynthetic rates and respiration in LC compared to AC plants, and is also in line with the findings of González-Meler *et al.* (2009), who observed decreased respiratory energy demand for biomass maintenance in *Arabidopsis thaliana* grown at 200 ppm compared to 370 ppm.

Contrary to previous studies that found increased g_s in C₃ plants grown at low [CO₂] (Ehleringer *et al.*, 2005; Temme *et al.*, 2013; Ward *et al.*, 1999), I did not observe an up-regulation of g_s , although this mechanism would enhance C assimilation in LC leaves. Since high g_s results in increased water loss, *P. mariana* may prioritize preventing water loss over increasing carbon uptake. Instead, the strategy adopted by LC plants to cope with their C-limited conditions relied more on enhancing carboxylation by Rubisco, as

observed in the higher $V_{\text{cmax}} / J_{\text{max}}$ ratio found in LC plants. Few studies have investigated photosynthetic capacity in plants grown at low CO_2 conditions, and the results are highly variable: growth at low CO_2 decreased both V_{cmax} and J_{max} (Ripley *et al.*, 2013), increased V_{cmax} but not J_{max} (Anderson *et al.*, 2001), or had little effect on either parameter (Cunniff *et al.*, 2017). Interestingly, these studies were conducted on herbaceous species, but *P. mariana* is an evergreen tree and may therefore respond differently to C limitation, as responses to environmental stress can vary depending on plant functional types (Kuiper *et al.*, 2014; McIntyre *et al.*, 1999). Thus, a better understanding of photosynthetic potential in plants grown at past low CO_2 conditions requires further investigation across a range of species.

4.5.2 Resin duct and terpene production

We present the first observations of reduced chemical defense capability in plants grown at the low CO_2 conditions of the past, which have implications for our understanding of CO_2 effects on plant defense across temporal scales, as well as plant function in ancient environments. We observed reduced resin duct area, or their complete absence, in the needles of LC plants, an effect that can be attributed to the reduced C assimilation and availability in LC plants. Reductions in resin duct size may be associated with decreased terpene production, since resin ducts collect terpenes and other compounds to form oleoresin, the major constitutive chemical defense in conifers (Keeling and Bohlmann, 2006). For example, Bjorkman *et al.* (1991) observed that the concentration of resin acids in Scots pine was more limited by the size of the resin ducts than the availability of substrate for resin synthesis. Furthermore, in cases analogous to the adverse growth conditions experienced by LC plants, constitutive resin duct area as well as resin flow have been shown to decline under unfavorable environmental conditions (Lombardero *et al.*, 2000; Lorio *et al.*, 1995; Lorio and Hodges, 1968; Slack *et al.*, 2016).

A monoterpene such as α -pinene commonly accounts for a substantial part of the total terpene concentration in evergreens (Geron *et al.*, 2000; Juuti *et al.*, 1990), and is active in many defense mechanisms (Kegge and Pierik, 2010; Penuelas *et al.*, 2005). Similarly,

dehydroabietic acid is one of the most common diterpenes found in conifer oleoresins (Trapp and Croteau, 2001). While monoterpene relative abundance decreased in LC compared to AC plants, diterpene abundance was unresponsive to growth CO₂. This observation, however, is not unexpected considering that these two terpene groups can function independently. Monoterpene and diterpene production are modulated by monoterpene synthase and diterpene synthase, respectively, (Funk *et al.*, 1994), and in defense responses, monoterpene synthase is activated earlier and is more active than the diterpene synthase (Steele *et al.*, 1998). Additionally, concentrations of mono and diterpenes can be differently affected when exposed to adverse environmental conditions, as seen with salinity and drought stress (Alonso *et al.*, 2015; Tounekti *et al.*, 2011).

While the carbon-nutrient balance hypothesis proposed by Bryant *et al.* (1983) predicted an increase in the production of carbon-based secondary compounds, such as terpenes, under environmental conditions that increase non-structural carbohydrate pools, often that does not seem to be the case for terpene production in elevated CO₂ studies. Most studies found terpene levels to be either unresponsive to growth at high CO₂ levels or terpene concentrations and emission are reduced in elevated CO₂- compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants (Loreto *et al.*, 2001; Peñuelas and Estiarte, 1998; Sallas *et al.*, 2003; Snow *et al.*, 2003; Williams *et al.*, 1994). Ler dau *et al.* (1995) proposed that reduced terpene production in elevated CO₂-grown plants could be a result of C allocation to secondary pathways competing with sinks when shoot growth is stimulated by high CO₂ concentrations and non-limiting nutrient availability. A similar mechanism likely caused the decrease in monoterpene production we observed in *P. mariana* in terms of competing pathways for C allocation, as C was preferentially directed to primary functions to sustain growth under C-limiting conditions. However, while the mechanism of C partitioning limiting terpene production at elevated and sub-ambient CO₂ conditions may be the same, its function in resource allocation and resulting terpene profile is different. This is exemplified by the case of certain plant species increasing the production of specific terpenes at elevated CO₂ even though overall terpene production declines. Both Heyworth *et al.* (1998) and Sallas *et al.* (2001) observed an increase in α -pinene in plants grown at elevated CO₂ compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants, while total terpene concentration was lower in elevated CO₂-grown plants. In such cases, the

difference in concentration between the various terpenes are postulated to be under a strong genetic control that may not be readily modified by environmental variables (White, 1984). It has also been suggested that monoterpene emission at elevated CO₂ could be uncoupled from photosynthesis (Holopainen *et al.*, 2013), and that augmented substrate availability at elevated CO₂ is a necessary but insufficient trigger (*i.e.*, the need of hormonal or direct physical cues) to activate secondary metabolic pathways (Fajer *et al.*, 1992).

The slower growth and reduced metabolic rates of LC plants (including variables such as biomass, photosynthesis, respiration) are direct effects of growth at C-limited conditions that prevented the allocation of resources to the production of secondary compounds, resulting in the decrease of the major terpenes produced by *P. mariana*. Physiological adjustments caused by changes in growth CO₂ are commonly greater in plants grown at low CO₂ conditions in relation to modern CO₂ levels than in elevated CO₂-grown plants compared to plants grown at current CO₂ conditions (Gerhart and Ward, 2010). Thus, the temporal continuum of atmospheric CO₂ levels influencing the ability of plants to produce defense compounds since the LGM may have shifted from a C-limiting effect to phenotypical variability of resource allocation when C is not limiting.

The absence of resin ducts and reduction of monoterpenes observed in LC plants poses new complexities to using these indicators in paleo-reconstructions. Resin ducts and terpenes have many paleobiology applications. For example, the isotopic composition of terpenes found in sediments are used in paleoenvironmental reconstructions (Huang *et al.*, 2013) and can help identify diet and feeding mode of herbivores (Danner *et al.*, 2017), while the wall thickness of epithelial cells surrounding ducts is considered a key feature for fossil diagnosis (Wu and Hu, 1997). Resin duct presence or absence, and the number of ducts and their area, have been commonly used for species assignment of plant fossils (Meijer, 2000; Obst *et al.*, 1991; Weng and Jackson, 1999). My findings, however, bring into the question the reliability of this feature when characterizing fossil samples dating from sub-ambient CO₂ periods. Furthermore, it also raises the question whether other commonly used anatomical features, such as parenchyma rays and the characteristics of vascular tissue cells, may also be affected by growth at past low CO₂

concentrations and thus deviate from patterns observed in extant species; such issues need to be addressed in future low CO₂ studies. The adverse effects that conifer resins can have on herbivores could have played an important role in altering trophic interactions in the past. For instance, it has been suggested that the migration of spruce in North America at the end of the Pleistocene may have exposed the now extinct mastodons to a food source containing resins that those animals were not adapted to digest (Metcalf *et al.*, 2013). Our results show that a conifer species grown at CO₂ levels of that time was able to produce resin compounds, but not to the same extent as plants grown at modern CO₂ conditions.

4.6 References

- Alonso, R., Berli, F.J., Bottini, R., Piccoli, P., 2015. Acclimation mechanisms elicited by sprayed abscisic acid, solar UV-B and water deficit in leaf tissues of field-grown grapevines. *Plant Physiol. Biochem.* 91, 56–60. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.plaphy.2015.03.011>
- Anderson, L.J., Maherali, H., Johnson, H.B., Polley, H.W., Jackson, R.B., 2001. Gas exchange and photosynthetic acclimation over subambient to elevated CO₂ in a C₃-C₄ grassland. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 693–707. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1354-1013.2001.00438.x>
- Baldwin, I.T., 2010. Plant volatiles. *Curr. Biol.* 20, R392–R397. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cub.2010.02.052>
- Becklin, K.M., Walker, S.M., Way, D.A., Ward, J.K., 2017. CO₂ studies remain key to understanding a future world. *New Phytol.* 214, 34–40. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14336>
- Björkman, C., Larsson, S., Gref, R., 1991. Effects of nitrogen fertilization on pine needle chemistry and sawfly performance. *Oecologia* 86, 202–209.
- Boucher, D., Lavallée, R., Mauffette, Y., 2001. Biological performance of the white pine weevil in relation to the anatomy of the resin canal system of four different host species. *Can. J. For. Res.* 31, 2035–2041. <https://doi.org/10.1139/cjfr-31-11-2035>
- Boulogne, I., Petit, P., Ozier-Lafontaine, H., Desfontaines, L., Loranger-Merciris, G., 2012. Insecticidal and antifungal chemicals produced by plants: a review. *Environ. Chem. Lett.* 10, 325–347. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10311-012-0359-1>

- Bryant, J.P., Chapin, F.S., Klein, D.R., 1983. Carbon / Nutrient balance of boreal plants in relation to vertebrate herbivory. *OIKOS* 40, 57–368.
- Cheng, S.-S., Wu, C.-L., Chang, H.-T., Kao, Y.-T., Chang, S.-T., 2004. Antitermitic and antifungal activities of essential oil of *Calocedrus formosana* leaf and its composition. *J. Chem. Ecol.* 30, 1957-1967.
- Ciais, P., Sabine, C., Bala, G., Bopp, L., Brovkin, V., Canadell, J., Chhabra, A., DeFries, R., Galloaway, J., Heimann, M., Jones, C., 2013. Climate change 2013: The physical science basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fifth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, in: Tignor, M., Allen, S.K., Boschung, J., Nauels, A., Xia, Y., Bex, V., Midgley, P.M. (Eds.)
- Coley, P.D., Massa, M., Lovelock, C.E., Winter, K., 2002. Effects of elevated CO₂ on foliar chemistry of saplings of nine species of tropical tree. *Oecologia* 133, 62–69. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00442-002-1005-6>
- Constable, J.V.H., Litvak, M.E., Greenberg, J.P., Monson, R.K., 1999. Monoterpene emission from coniferous trees in response to elevated CO₂ concentration and climate warming. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 5, 252–267. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2486.1999.00212.x>
- Cunniff, J., Jones, G., Charles, M., Osborne, C.P., 2017. Yield responses of wild C₃ and C₄ crop progenitors to subambient CO₂: a test for the role of CO₂ limitation in the origin of agriculture. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 23, 380–393. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13473>
- Danner, H., Desurmont, G.A., Cristescu, S.M., van Dam, N.M., 2017. Herbivore-induced plant volatiles accurately predict history of coexistence, diet breadth, and feeding mode of herbivores. *New Phytol.* 726-738 <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14428>
- Dippery, J.K., Tissue, D.T., Thomas, R.B., Strain, B.R., 1995. Effects of low and elevated CO₂ on C₃ and C₄ annuals. *Oecologia* 101, 13–20. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00328894>
- Dorman, H.J.D., Deans, S.G., 2000. Antimicrobial agents from plants: Antibacterial activity of plant volatile oils. *J. Appl. Microbiol.* 88, 308–316. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2672.2000.00969.x>
- Drake, B.G., González-Meler, M.A., Long, S.P., 1997. More efficient plants: A Consequence of rising atmospheric CO₂? *Annu. Rev. Plant Physiol. Plant Mol. Biol.* 48, 609–639. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev.arplant.48.1.609>
- Dusenge, M.E., Duarte, A.G., Way, D.A., 2018. Plant carbon metabolism and climate change: elevated CO₂ and temperature impacts on photosynthesis, photorespiration and respiration. *New Phytol.* 2017. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15283>
- Duursma, R.A., 2015. Plantecophys - An R package for analysing and modelling leaf gas

exchange data. PLoS One 10, e0143346.
<https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pone.0143346>

- Ehleringer, J.R., Cerling, T.E., Dearing, M.D., 2005. A History of atmospheric CO₂ and its effects on plants, animals, and ecosystems, 1st ed. Springer, Salt Lake City, UT, USA.
- Fajer, E.D., Bowers, M.D., Bazzaz, F.A., 1992. The effect of nutrients and enriched CO₂ environments on production of carbon-based allelochemicals in *Plantago*: a test of the carbon/nutrient balance hypothesis. *Am. Nat.* 140, 707–723
- Falcon-Lang, H.J., Mages, V., Collinson, M., 2016. The oldest *Pinus* and its preservation by fire. *Geology* 44, 303–306. <https://doi.org/10.1130/G37526.1>
- Farquhar, G.D., von Caemmerer, S., Berry, J.A., 1980. A biochemical model of photosynthetic CO₂ assimilation in leaves of C₃ species. *Planta* 149, 78–90. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00386231>
- Funk, C., Lewinsohn, E., Vogel, B.S., Steele, C. 1, Croteau, R., 1994. Regulation of oleoresinosis in grand fir (*Abies grandis*) - Coordinate induction of monoterpene and diterpene cyclases and two cytochrome P450-dependent diterpenoid hydroxylases by stem wounding. *Plant Physiol.* 106, 999–1005
- Gerhart, L.M., Ward, J.K., 2010. Plant responses to low [CO₂] of the past. *New Phytol.* 188, 674–695. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2010.03441.x>
- Geron, C., Rasmussen, R., R. Arnts, R., Guenther, A., 2000. A review and synthesis of monoterpene speciation from forests in the United States. *Atmos. Environ.* 34, 1761–1781. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1352-2310\(99\)00364-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1352-2310(99)00364-7)
- González-Meler, M.A., Blanc-Betes, E., Flower, C.E., Ward, J.K., Gomez-Casnovas, N., 2009. Plastic and adaptive responses of plant respiration to changes in atmospheric CO₂ concentration. *Physiol. Plant.* 137, 473–484. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1399-3054.2009.01262.x>
- Graham, R.W., Lundelius Jr, E.L., 1984. Coevolutionary disequilibrium and Pleistocene extinctions, in: *Quaternary Extinctions: A Prehistoric Revolution*. pp. 223–249
- Guthrie, R.D., 2003. Rapid body size decline in Alaskan Pleistocene horses before extinction. *Lett. to Nat.* 426, 169–171. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nature02070>
- Guthrie, R.D., 1984. Mosaics, allelochemicals and nutrients: An ecological theory of late Pleistocene megafaunal extinctions., in: *Quaternary Extinctions: A Prehistoric Revolution*. pp. 259–298
- Hartmann, T., 1996. Diversity and variability of plant secondary metabolism: a mechanistic view, in: *Proceedings of the 9th International Symposium on Insect-Plant Relationships*. Springer Netherlands, Dordrecht, pp. 177–188.

https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-009-1720-0_42

- Heyworth, C.J., Iason, G.R., Temperton, V., Jarvis, P.G., Duncan, A.J., 1998. The effect of elevated CO₂ concentration and nutrient supply on carbon-based plant secondary metabolites in *Pinus sylvestris* L. *Oecologia* 115, 344–350
- Hoagland, D.R., Arnon, D.I., 1950. The water-culture method for growing plants without soil, 2nd edit. ed. Circular. California agricultural experiment stations.
- Holopainen, J.K., 2004. Multiple functions of inducible plant volatiles. *Trends Plant Sci.* 9, 529–533. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.TPLANTS.2004.09.006>
- Huang, X., Xue, J., Wang, X., Meyers, P.A., Huang, J., Xie, S., 2013. Paleoclimate influence on early diagenesis of plant triterpenes in the Dajiuhu peatland, central China. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 123, 106–119. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.gca.2013.09.017>
- Juuti, S., Arey, J., Atkinson, R., 1990. Monoterpene emission rate measurements from a Monterey pine. *J. Geophys. Res.* 95, 7515. <https://doi.org/10.1029/JD095iD06p07515>
- Keeling, C.I., Bohlmann, J., 2006. Diterpene resin acids in conifers. *Phytochemistry* 67, 2415–2423. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.phytochem.2006.08.019>
- Kegge, W., Pierik, R., 2010. Biogenic volatile organic compounds and plant competition. *Trends Plant Sci.* 15, 126–132. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.tplants.2009.11.007>
- Kuiper, J.J., Mooij, W.M., Bragazza, L., Robroek, B.J.M., 2014. Plant functional types define magnitude of drought response in peatland CO₂ exchange. *Ecology.* 95, 123–131
- Lambers, H., 1993. Rising CO₂, secondary plant metabolism, plant-herbivore interactions and litter decomposition theoretical considerations. *Vegetatio* 104/105, 263–271. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00048157>
- Langenheim, J.H., 1994. Higher plant terpenoids: A phytocentric overview of their ecological roles. *J. Chem. Ecol.* 20, 1223–1280
- Langenheim, J.H., 1990. Plant Resins. *Am. Sci.* 78, 16–24
- Lerdau, M., Matson, P., Fall, R., Monson, R., 1995. Ecological controls over monoterpene emissions from Douglas-Fir (*Pseudotsuga Menziesii*). *Ecology* 76, 2640–2647. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2265834>
- Lombardero, M.J., Ayres, M.P., Lorio Jr, P.L., Ruel, J.J., 2000. Environmental effects on constitutive and inducible resin defences of *Pinus taeda*. *Ecol. Lett.* 3, 329–339. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1461-0248.2000.00163.x>

- Loreto, F., Fischbach, R.J., Schnitzler, J.-P., Ciccioli, P., Brancaleoni, E., Calfapietra, C., Seufert, G., 2001. Monoterpene emission and monoterpene synthase activities in the Mediterranean evergreen oak *Quercus ilex* L. grown at elevated CO₂ concentrations. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 709–717. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1354-1013.2001.00442.x>
- Lorio, P.L., Hodges, J.D., 1968. Microsite effects on oleoresin exudation pressure of large loblolly pines. *Ecology* 49, 1207–1210. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1934519>
- Lorio, P.L., Stephen, F.M., Paine, T.D., 1995. Environment and ontogeny modify loblolly pine response to induced acute water deficits and bark beetle attack. *For. Ecol. Manage.* 73, 97–110. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0378-1127\(94\)03500-V](https://doi.org/10.1016/0378-1127(94)03500-V)
- Manum, S.B., Van Konijnenburg-Van Cittert, J.H.A., Wilde, V., 2000. *Tritaenia Maegdefrau* et Rudolf, Mesozoic ‘*Sciadopitys*-like’ leaves in mass accumulations. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 109, 255–269. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667\(99\)00058-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667(99)00058-5)
- Martin, D., Tholl, D., Gershenzon, J., Bohlmann, J., 2002. Methyl jasmonate induces traumatic resin ducts, terpenoid resin biosynthesis, and terpenoid accumulation in developing xylem of Norway spruce stems. *Plant Physiol.* 129, 1003–1018. <https://doi.org/10.1104/pp.011001>
- Maurino, V.G., Peterhansel, C., 2010. Photorespiration: Current status and approaches for metabolic engineering. *Curr. Opin. Plant Biol.* 13, 248–255. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.PBI.2010.01.006>
- McIntyre, S., Díaz, S., Lavorel, S., Cramer, W., 1999. Plant functional types and disturbance dynamics – Introduction. *J. Veg. Sci.* 10, 603–608. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1654-1103.1999.tb00103.x>
- Meijer, J.J.F., 2000. Fossil woods from the Late Cretaceous Aachen Formation. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 112, 297–336. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667\(00\)00007-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0034-6667(00)00007-5)
- Metcalf, J.Z., Longstaffe, F.J., Hodgins, G., 2013. Proboscideans and paleoenvironments of the Pleistocene Great Lakes: Landscape, vegetation, and stable isotopes. *Quat. Sci. Rev.* 76, 102–113. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.quascirev.2013.07.004>
- Mohan, J.E., Ziska, L.H., Schlesinger, W.H., Thomas, R.B., Sicher, R.C., George, K., Clark, J.S., 2006. Biomass and toxicity responses of poison ivy (*Toxicodendron radicans*) to elevated atmospheric CO₂. *PNAS* 103, 9086–9089. <https://doi.org/10.1890/06-1609.1>
- Noctor, G., Mhamdi, A., 2017. Climate change, CO₂, and defense: The metabolic, redox, and signaling perspectives. *Trends Plant Sci.* 22, 857–870. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.tplants.2017.07.007>
- Obst, J.R., Mcmillan, N.J., Blanchette, R.A., Christensen, D.J., Faix, O., Han, J.S.,

- Kuster, T.A., Landucci, L.L., Newman, R.H., Pettersen, R.C., Schwandt, V.H., Wesolowski, M.F., 1991. Characterization of Canadian Arctic fossil woods, *Bulletin*.
- Peñuelas, J., Estiarte, M., 1998. Can elevated CO₂ affect secondary metabolism and ecosystem function? *Tree* 13, 20–24. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347\(97\)01235-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-5347(97)01235-4)
- Peñuelas, J., Estiarte, M., Llusia, J., 1997. Carbon-based secondary compounds at elevated CO₂. *Photosynthetica* 33, 313–316
- Peñuelas, J., Llusia, J., Asensio, D., Munne-bosch, S., 2005. Linking isoprene with plant thermotolerance, antioxidants and monoterpene emissions. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 28, 278–286. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-3040.2004.01250.x>
- Petit, R.J., Raynaud, D., Basile, I., Chappellaz, J., Ritz, C., Delmotte, M., Legrand, M., Lorius, C., Pe, L., 1999. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature* 399, 429–413. <https://doi.org/10.1038/20859>
- Prentice, I.C., Bartlein, P.J., Webb, T., 1991. Vegetation and climate change in Eastern North America since the Last Glacial Maximum. *Ecology* 72, 2038–2056. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1941558>
- R Core Team, 2013. *R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing*
- Ripley, B.S., Cunniff, J., Osborne, C.P., 2013. Photosynthetic acclimation and resource use by the C₃ and C₄ subspecies of *Alloteropsis semialata* in low CO₂ atmospheres. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 19, 900–910. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.12091>
- Robert, J.A., Madilao, L.L., White, R., Yanchuk, A., King, J., Bohlmann, J., 2010. Terpenoid metabolite profiling in Sitka spruce identifies association of dehydroabietic acid, (+)-3-carene, and terpinolene with resistance against white pine weevil. *Botany* 88, 810–820. <https://doi.org/10.1139/B10-049>
- Sage, R.F., 1995. Was low atmospheric CO₂ during the Pleistocene a limiting factor for the origin of agriculture? *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 1, 93–106. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.1995.tb00009.x>
- Sage, R.F., Coleman, J.R., 2001. Effects of low atmospheric CO₂ on plants: More than a thing of the past. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 18–24. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(00\)01813-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(00)01813-6)
- Sage, Rowan F, Cowling, S.A., 1999. Implications of stress in low CO₂ atmospheres of the past: Are today's plants too conservative for a high CO₂ world?, in: Luo, Y., Mooney, H.A. (Eds.), *Carbon Dioxide and Environmental Stress*. Academic Press, San Diego, CA, USA, pp. 289–304

- Sallas, L., Kainulainen, P., Utriainen, J., Holopainen, T., Holopainen, J.K., 2001. The influence of elevated O₃ and CO₂ concentrations on secondary metabolites of Scots pine (*Pinus sylvestris* L.) seedlings. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 303–311. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2486.2001.00408.x>
- Sallas, L., Luomala, E.-M., Utriainen, J., Kainulainen, P., Hopolainen, J.K., 2003. Contrasting effects of elevated carbon dioxide concentration and temperature on Rubisco activity, chlorophyll fluorescence, needle ultrastructure and secondary metabolites in conifer seedlings. *Tree Physiol.* 23, 97–108. <https://doi.org/https://doi.org/10.1093/treephys/23.2.97>
- Schneider, C. a, Rasband, W.S., Eliceiri, K.W., 2012. NIH Image to ImageJ: 25 years of image analysis. *Nat. Methods* 9, 671–675. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nmeth.2089>
- Schurgers, G., Hickler, T., Miller, P.A., Arneth, A., 2009. European emissions of isoprene and monoterpenes from the Last Glacial Maximum to present. *Biogeosciences* 6, 2779-2797
- Slack, A.W., Zeibig-Kichas, N.E., Kane, J.M., Varner, J.M., 2016. Contingent resistance in longleaf pine (*Pinus palustris*) growth and defense 10 years following smoldering fires. *For. Ecol. Manage.* 364, 130–138. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.foreco.2016.01.014>
- Snow, M.D., Bard, R.R., Olszyk, D.M., Minster, L.M., Hager, A.N., Tingey, D.T., 2003. Monoterpene levels in needles of Douglas fir exposed to elevated CO₂ and temperature. *Physiol. Plant.* 117, 352–358. <https://doi.org/10.1034/j.1399-3054.2003.00035.x>
- Steele, C.L., Katoh, S., Rg Bohlmann, J., Croteau, R., 1998. Regulation of oleoresinosis in grand fir (*Abies grandis*) - Differential transcriptional control of monoterpene, sesquiterpene, and diterpene synthase genes in response to wounding. *Plant Physiol.* 116, 1497–1504
- Stockey, R.A., Rothwell, G.W., Addy, H.D., Currah, R.S., 2001. Mycorrhizal association of the extinct conifer *Metasequoia milleri*. *Mycology* 105, 202–205. <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0953756200003221>
- Temme, A.A., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2013. Meta-analysis reveals profound responses of plant traits to glacial CO₂ levels. *Ecol. Evol.* 3, 4525–4535. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.836>
- Tomlin, E.S., Borden, A.H., 1997. Thin bark and high density of outer resin ducts: interrelated resistance traits in Sitka spruce against the White Pine Weevil (Coleoptera: *Curculionidae*). *J. Econ. Entomol.* 90, 235–239
- Tounekti, T., Vadel, A.M., Ennajeh, M., Khemira, H., Munné-Bosch, S., 2011. Ionic interactions and salinity affect monoterpene and phenolic diterpene composition in rosemary (*Rosmarinus officinalis*). *J. Plant Nutr. Soil Sci.* 174, 504–514. <https://doi.org/10.1002/jpln.201000213>

- Trapp, S., Croteau, R., 2001. Defensive resin biosynthesis in conifers. *Annu. Rev. Plant Physiol. Plant Mol. Biol* 52, 689–724
- Vannette, R.L., Hunter, M.D., 2011. Genetic variation in expression of defense phenotype may mediate evolutionary adaptation of *Asclepias syriaca* to elevated CO₂. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 17, 1277–1288. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.2010.02316.x>
- Ward, J.K., Tissue, D.T., Thomas, R.B., Strain, B.R., 1999. Comparative responses of model C₃ and C₄ plants to drought in low and elevated CO₂. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 5, 857–867. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2486.1999.00270.x>
- Weng, C., Jackson, S.T., 1999. Late Glacial and Holocene vegetation history and paleoclimate of the Kaibab Plateau, Arizona. *Palaeogeogr. Palaeoclimatol. Palaeoecol.* 153, 179–201. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0031-0182\(99\)00070-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0031-0182(99)00070-X)
- White, E.E., 1984. Mode of genetic control of monoterpenes in foliage of controlled crosses of *Pinus contorta*. *Silvae Genet*
- Williams, A., Pétriacq, P., Schwarzenbacher, R.E., Beerling, D.J., Ton, J., 2018. Mechanisms of glacial-to-future atmospheric CO₂ effects on plant immunity. *New Phytol.* <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15018>
- Williams, R.S., Lincoln, D.E., Thomas, R.B., 1994. Loblolly pine grown under elevated CO₂ affects early instar pine sawfly performance. *Oecologia* 98, 64–71
- Wu, H., Hu, Z.-H., 1997. Comparative anatomy of resin ducts of the *Pinaceae*. *Trees* 11, 135–1143
- Zavala, J. a, Nabity, P.D., Delucia, E.H., 2012. An emerging understanding of mechanisms governing insect herbivory under elevated CO₂. *Annu. Rev. Entomol.* 79–97. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-ento-120811-153544>
- Zazula, Grant D., Schweger, C.E., Beaudoin, A.B., McCourt, G.H., 2006. Macrofossil and pollen evidence for full-glacial steppe within an ecological mosaic along the Bluefish River, eastern Beringia. *Quat. Int.* 142–143, 2–19. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.QUAINT.2005.03.010>
- Zazula, G. D., Telka, A.M., Harington, C.R., Schweger, C.E., Mathewes, R.W., 2006. New Spruce (*Picea* spp.) macrofossils from Yukon territory: Implications for late Pleistocene refugia in Eastern Beringia. *Arctic* 59, 391–400
- Zidianakis, G., Iliopoulos, G., Zelilidis, A., Kovar-Eder, J., 2016. Pinus remains from the Pitsidia plant assemblage document coastal pine forests in southern Crete during the late Miocene. *Rev. Palaeobot. Palynol.* 235, 11–30. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.revpalbo.2016.09.003>

Chapter 5

5 General discussion

While atmospheric CO₂ concentrations are currently rising above 400 ppm, plants have experienced CO₂ levels below 270 ppm for the past millennia, and levels as low as 180 ppm at the end of the Last Glacial Maximum (Petit *et al.*, 1999). Physiological traits developed during this period when growth was limited by CO₂ availability could have legacy effects on plant responses to modern and future rapidly increasing CO₂ concentrations (Becklin *et al.*, 2017; Gerhart and Ward, 2010; Sage and Coleman, 2001; Sage and Cowling, 1999). Despite the prevalence of low CO₂ conditions in the modern history of plants, however, the available literature on the subject is not only scarce but lacks the basic complexity surrounding plant growth in natural environments: interactions with other abiotic and biotic factors. Addressing such gaps is not only necessary to extend the temporal resolution through which we investigate plant responses to changes in growth CO₂, but can also help generate more accurate inferences based on fossil plant samples dating from low CO₂ periods.

The contribution of this thesis to expanding our understanding of plant development at low CO₂ conditions of the past included investigating how growth at low CO₂ interacts with N availability, since N is one of the most important and limiting nutrients for plant growth. I also assessed the interaction between low CO₂-grown plants and mycorrhizal fungi, which is arguably plants' most important living partner in natural ecosystems. I then further explored how plants balance their growth in C-limited environments by investigating their ability to allocate resources to secondary metabolites such as defense compounds.

In Chapter 2, I investigated whether growth and N isotope composition of low CO₂-grown plants were differently affected by different N sources. I found that the overall growth among the different N treatments was similar at low growth CO₂, but several of the variables measured, including $\delta^{15}\text{N}$, responded differently to the combined effects of low CO₂ and different N sources. In Chapter 3, I assessed how reduced C availability at

low CO₂ conditions alter the exchange of resources between plants and fungi in mycorrhizal association. Results showed that plants grown at 180 ppm had a higher degree of association with the mycorrhizal fungi and benefited from higher N acquisition, which decreased the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in roots of mycorrhizal plants. In Chapter 4, I explored whether the ability to produce defense compounds were reduced in low CO₂-grown plants compared to plants grown at modern CO₂ conditions. Indeed, growth at low CO₂ decreased the production of terpenes, which was accompanied by a reduction in the ability of needles from low CO₂-grown plants to form resin ducts. As discussed below, put together, these results have several implications for our understating of growth, photosynthesis, and C and N isotope compositions in plants grown during past low-CO₂ environments. Also, as shown in Figure 5.1, the interaction between the environmental factors influencing growth at low CO₂ concentrations discussed in this thesis can affect plant physiological traits in diverse ways.

5.1 Plant growth and N acquisition at low CO₂

As expected in plants grown at low CO₂ conditions, there was a strong decline in biomass production in both *Elymus canadensis* and *Picea mariana* grown at sub-ambient CO₂ compared to ambient CO₂ concentrations, and a higher allocation of biomass to leaves in relation to roots. To enhance CO₂ uptake when CO₂ availability is limited, low CO₂-grown plants favor the production of photosynthetic tissues. My work further establishes that root growth in plants grown at past low CO₂ concentrations is reduced compared to plants grown at modern conditions. In addition, I offer a new insight to the plant-soil nutrient dynamics at low CO₂ conditions: roots may have explored less soil, but did not necessarily have reduced access to soil N if they could form mycorrhizal associations. I found that *E. canadensis* grown at low CO₂ had a higher percentage of roots colonized with the mycorrhizal fungus *Glomus intraradices*, and benefited from increased root N compared to non-mycorrhizal plants grown at low CO₂.

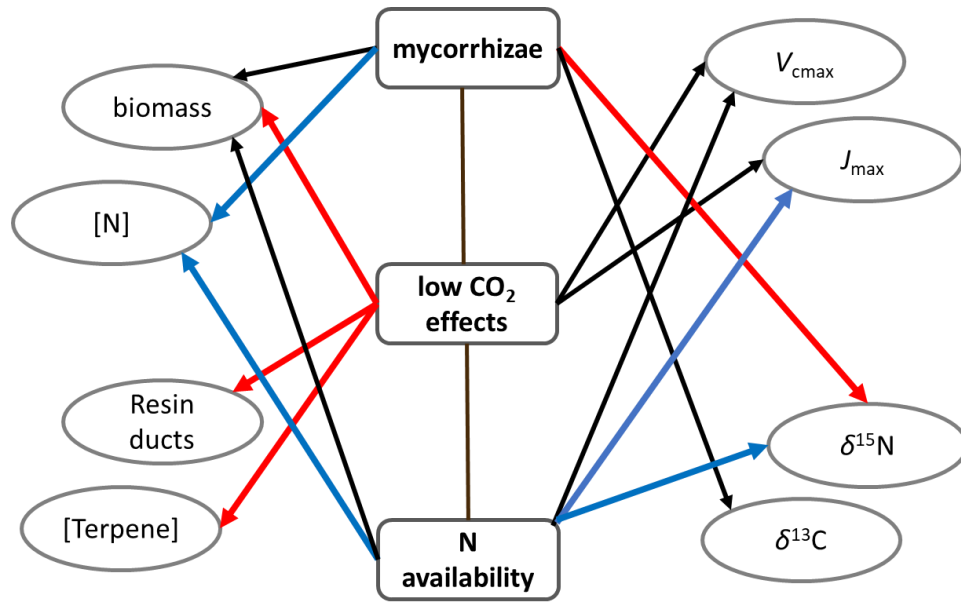


Figure 5.1. Low CO₂ effects and their interaction with mycorrhizal association and N availability on plant traits. The color of the arrows indicates whether the value of the measured parameter increased (blue), decreased (red), or was unaffected (black).

More experiments with different species of plants and fungi are necessary to ascertain if establishing a stronger association with mycorrhizal fungi was a widespread strategy adopted by plants growing at low CO₂ levels of the past. Nevertheless, my observation of an enhanced mycorrhizal association in low CO₂-grown plants is the first empirical assessment of a possible strategy for enhancing soil nutrient uptake in C-limited conditions of the past. In this regard, the next step should be to investigate phosphorus (P) uptake by mycorrhizal plants at low CO₂, since arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi also have a prominent role in mobilizing P to the host plant (Bolan, 1991).

Another aspect of plant N acquisition at low CO₂ conditions that I explored was the range in N sources available for uptake. I expected changes in plant growth and the ability to assimilate N at low CO₂ to vary depending on the N source available, due to the influence that decreased C assimilation and enhanced photorespiration have on N assimilation (Bloom *et al.*, 2010, 2014; Busch *et al.*, 2018). While photosynthetic parameters in *E. canadensis* fertilized with NO₃⁻ had a performance closer to fully fertilized plants in comparison to plants that received NH₄⁺-only or a half-fertilization, changes in biomass or N concentration among the different N treatments were minimal. These results showed that low CO₂ limits growth and N assimilation regardless of the N source available, unless, as discussed above, N acquisition is facilitated by an extrinsic source such as mycorrhizal association. Nonetheless, mycorrhizal interactions at low CO₂ conditions exposed to different N sources should be investigated and may provide surprising results. Certain species of plants (Alt *et al.*, 2017; Dier *et al.*, 2017) and mycorrhizal fungi (Breuninger *et al.*, 2004; Chambers *et al.*, 1980) thrive better when specific N forms are available. For example, we observed enhanced cooperation between *E. canadensis* and *G. intraradices*, but if only NH₄⁺ is available, and both symbionts are NO₃⁻-preferring species, the symbiosis could become detrimental if the symbionts were to compete for N resources.

5.2 Decreases in photosynthetic rates at low CO₂

As CO₂ is the substrate for photosynthesis, photosynthetic rates in low CO₂-grown plants is reduced in comparison to plants grown at current CO₂ conditions. This effect was observed in both *E. canadensis* and *P. mariana*, and it is a common occurrence across all plant functional types (Dalling *et al.*, 2016; Sage and Coleman, 2001; Sage and Cowling, 1999; Temme *et al.*, 2013). One strategy observed in low CO₂-grown plants to compensate for low CO₂ availability is increased stomatal conductance to allow a higher influx of CO₂ through the stoma (Ehleringer *et al.*, 2005; Temme *et al.*, 2013; Ward *et al.*, 1999). I found, however, that neither *E. canadensis* nor *P. mariana* adopted this strategy; one possible explanation for this finding is that enhanced stomatal conductance can also result in increased water loss. Nevertheless, the observation that the number of stomata produced by *E. canadensis* was affected by growth at low CO₂ and reduced N availability indicates that stomatal anatomy may change even if conductance rates are not altered. This finding is particularly relevant when using stomatal anatomy and density as paleo-indicators to infer past low CO₂ concentrations.

Another aspect of photosynthetic gas exchange that has been poorly explored in low CO₂ studies is changes in maximum carboxylation rates by Rubisco (V_{cmax}) and maximum electron transport rates (J_{max}). To our knowledge, only four studies have directly measured V_{cmax} and J_{max} in plants grown from seed at low CO₂, and only herbaceous species have been measured. The scarcity of data makes it difficult to form generalized assumptions, but it seems that V_{cmax} may be more responsive in herbaceous species grown at low CO₂ than J_{max} . Tissue *et al.* (1995) observed increased V_{cmax} rates in *Abutilon theophrasti*, while a decrease in V_{cmax} in *Solanum dimidiatum* was found by Anderson *et al.* (2001), but in both cases J_{max} was unaffected. Both parameters, however, decreased in *Alloteropsis semialata* (Ripley *et al.*, 2013), while both were unaffected in *Hordeum spontaneum* and *Triticum boeoticum* (Cunniff *et al.*, 2017). It is therefore particularly interesting that I found for *P. mariana*, an evergreen tree, that J_{max} was lower in low CO₂ compared to ambient CO₂-grown plants, while V_{cmax} was unaffected. Thus, future low CO₂ studies examining V_{cmax} and J_{max} in different plant functional types are necessary to

establish a more solid baseline of changes in photosynthetic physiology for low CO₂ conditions of the past.

5.3 Mycorrhizae and N availability influence C and N isotope compositions at low CO₂

I presented here the first C and N isotope measurements of plant tissues from plants associated with a mycorrhizal fungus grown at low CO₂ conditions. The mycorrhizal association was stimulated in low CO₂-grown plants compared to plants grown at ambient conditions, which resulted in increased discrimination against ¹³C in leaves and against ¹⁵N in roots. The shift in $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ by -2.7‰ when comparing mycorrhizal to non-mycorrhizal plants grown at low CO₂ is substantial, to the extent that it could confound inferences based on this indicator. For example, Beerling and Jolley (1998) used the decline in $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of about -3‰ in fossil pollen from *Inaperturopollenites hiatus*, an extinct conifer species, dating from the Palaeocene/Eocene transition (between 58 and 55 Mya) as a proxy to confirm a spike in atmospheric ¹²CO₂ that occurred during that period. The association between conifers and mycorrhizal fungi is widespread in extant species (Björkman, 1970; Fogel, 1988; Opik *et al.*, 2008), and is well recorded in extinct species as well (Bomfleur *et al.*, 2013; Schwendemann *et al.*, 2011; Strullu-Derrien *et al.*, 2018). For instance, Stockey *et al.* (2001) observed that the arbuscular mycorrhizal structures present in the 48.7 My-old extinct conifer *Metasequoia milleri* are similar to those present in modern conifers. Thus, if the functioning of this association in ancient species is similar to modern genotypes, the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ of ancient plants could have become more negative if they acquired the ability to establish mycorrhizal associations. That said, the ability to establish mycorrhizal association can be abandoned and/or gained over time (Maherali *et al.*, 2016), which adds complexity to the consideration of this potential effect.

The mycorrhizal association also decreased root $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ by -2.7‰ in mycorrhizal compared to non-mycorrhizal plants grown at low CO₂. Another observation that

influenced $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ when comparing low CO_2 - to ambient CO_2 -grown plants was the source and availability of N for plant uptake. Fertilization with only NO_3^- decreased leaf $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ by 1.2 ‰, while plants that received only a half-fertilization were enriched in ^{15}N by 0.8 ‰, creating a difference of 2 ‰ between these two N treatments. Although it is uncertain if these changes in isotope discrimination can be additive, in a hypothetical scenario where mycorrhizal plants also experience N shortage, the shift in N isotope composition could result in a decrease of -3.5 ‰ in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$. Such relatively large shifts in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ can skew interpretations of this indicator, for example, when reconstructing food webs dating from low CO_2 periods, especially considering that the standard discrimination against ^{15}N between trophic levels is 3.4 ‰ (Minagawa and Wada, 1984; Post, 2002). Adding the potential presence of a mycorrhizal association to paleo-reconstruction models may also help elucidate abnormal $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ found in ancient herbivores. For instance, the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in bulk collagen remnants from the woolly mammoth (*Mammuthus primigenius*), dating from the end of the Pleistocene (about 11,700 ya), was distinct from other herbivores, but similar to the carnivores that lived at the same area as the mammoth (Szpak *et al.*, 2010). It has been suggested that the unexpected ^{15}N -enrichment could be attributed to an isotopically distinct food source (Schwartz-Narbonne *et al.*, 2015). In contrast, Drucker *et al.* (2003) observed that the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ in red deer (*Cervus elaphus*) collagen found at Rochedane (France) decreased over the Terminal Pleistocene-Early Holocene (13,000 to 8,000 ya) by more than -6 ‰. The authors concluded that changes in environmental conditions, such as increased rainfall, could not explain this variation, but hypothesized that variations in the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of the plants consumed caused by changes in N acquisition during that period may have affected the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of the red deer.

Thus, I advocate that incorporating possible N sources available for uptake and the possibility of mycorrhizal associations into interpretation of C and N isotope compositions of ancient plant samples will enhance the ecological accuracy of prediction based on these indicators. In this case, soil characteristics can be used to determine which N conversion process are more likely (Amundson *et al.*, 2003; Brady and Weil 2013), and the presence of mycorrhizae can be established by examining the fossils themselves (*e.g.*, Allen *et al.*, 2006; Strullu-Derrien and Strullu, 2007; Krings *et al.*, 2013; Taylor *et*

al., 2015) or determining whether the species commonly establishes mycorrhizal associations (Brundrett, 2009, 2002; Öpik *et al.*, 2006; Wang and Qiu, 2006).

Here I investigated only one biotic (mycorrhizal fungi) and one abiotic (N availability) environmental factor individually. Including other environmental variables and their interactions could provide new insights to how we use isotopes in paleo-ecological reconstructions. For instance, modern plants experiencing water stress are usually more enriched in ^{15}N than well-watered plants (Raimanová and Haberle, 2010; Yousfi *et al.*, 2012) and this enrichment can be accentuated by growth at elevated CO_2 (Serret *et al.*, 2018). However, we have no information if growth under low CO_2 conditions of the past can also intensify changes in $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of plants under water stress.

5.4 Paleoecology implications of mycorrhizal associations and reduced chemical defense

The observation that plants grown at low CO_2 increase the N concentration of their roots when associated with mycorrhizae, without reducing their C content, suggests that mycorrhizal plants in the past may have presented higher nutritional value to herbivores. There are reports of modern primary consumers benefiting from higher nutrient access by feeding on mycorrhizal plants (Currie *et al.*, 2011; Gange *et al.*, 1999), and such a preference in the past may have been more common if certain herbivores were able to recognize this higher nutritional value. Thus, identifying whether producers were mycorrhizal species could help improve the characterization of nutrient transfer between trophic levels.

Another effect caused by growth at low CO_2 observed for the first time in this thesis involved the anatomy of resin ducts in a conifer. Resin ducts in needles of low CO_2 -grown plants were smaller, or in some cases, absent. Thus, it is not surprising that terpene production also declined, especially the major monoterpenes that constitute the resin of *P. mariana*. There is uncertainty regarding the extent to which terpene production will be affected by CO_2 concentrations above current concentrations (Loreto *et al.*, 2001;

Penuelas *et al.*, 1997; Williams *et al.*, 1994). As low CO₂ restricts primary metabolic functions, however, it is likely that concentrations of secondary metabolites, such as terpenes, will decline under these conditions. If most plants growing in the past at low CO₂ conditions had a reduced capability to chemically defend themselves against herbivores, certain relationships between producers and primary consumers in the past probably differed from modern ones. Certain food sources may have been more palatable at the end of the LGM than they currently are, and their palatability may have decreased as CO₂ increased. Such observations support a current hypothesis that the expansion of spruce in North America at the end of the LGM exposed the mastodon to toxins present in needle resins that those animals were not adapted to digest (Metcalf *et al.*, 2013). As CO₂ concentrations have been rising steadily since the LGM, spruce trees may have slowly increased their resin production, which may have contributed to the extinction of this mega-herbivore.

5.5 Future work

In order to achieve a better characterization of photosynthetic performance under C-limited conditions of the past, future work should investigate the photosynthetic physiology of species from different functional types, especially photosynthetic capacity, with measurements of V_{cmax} and J_{max} in less explored PFTs such as tropical species. Nutrient acquisition at past low CO₂ concentrations is also poorly characterized. While I assessed N acquisition at low CO₂, the impact of a low CO₂ environment on other essential nutrients such as P should also be investigated. Such investigations should take into account the importance of mycorrhizal association to the dynamics of soil nutrient uptake. In this regard, investigating other mycorrhizal types, such as ectomycorrhizae, is also necessary to confirm if mycorrhizal associations ubiquitously benefit nutrient acquisition in low CO₂-grown plants.

Growing different species of mycorrhizal plants, as well as plants with different N-preferences, at past low CO₂ conditions can also help improve the characterization of

ancient food webs and nutrient transfer between trophic levels, especially when using C and N isotope compositions. Discrimination against ^{15}N in *E. canadensis* grown at low CO_2 changed depending on the N source available, but it is unknown how the $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of a NH_4^+ -preferring species could change if only NO_3^- is available, especially in an environment where NO_3^- reduction is potentially facilitated by higher photorespiration. Adding further to this scenario, the presence of a mycorrhizal fungus would likely change $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ from its source to the final signal in plant tissues. Whether discrimination against ^{15}N would increase or decrease, however, is uncertain; it is unclear if the symbiosis would enhance cooperation at low CO_2 or become detrimental if the symbionts have to compete for N resources.

Considering that some needles of *P. mariana* were unable to form resin ducts, investigating the leaf anatomy of plants grown at low CO_2 is also necessary to assess which anatomical features used in the identification of leaf fossils from low CO_2 periods are a reliable indicator of species identity. Further explorations of whether C allocation to secondary metabolic functions is the main cause inhibiting resin duct formation should also be carried out. For instance, the combined effects of C-limitation at low CO_2 and reduced soil N availability may constrict the ability of plants to produce N-based defense compounds (*i.e.*, alkaloids) but not necessarily the formation of resin ducts compared to low CO_2 -grown plants that are not N limited.

Lastly, a major caveat in low CO_2 studies is whether modern plant genotypes can adequately represent the response of ancient genotypes to past low CO_2 levels. One possibility to verify if the behavior of modern plants differs or not from their ancient relatives growing at low CO_2 concentrations would involve examining preserved ancient plants, or even ‘resuscitating’ ancient species when feasible. For instance, using seeds and fruits excavated from fossil burrows preserved in the Siberian permafrost dating from 30,000 years ago, Yashina *et al.* (2012) was able to grow healthy, sexually reproducing plants of *Silene stenophylla*. That said, while ancient species may be the ideal subject in low CO_2 studies, using modern genotypes is the most accessible, if not the only, available option. Besides, as shown in this thesis, modern plants still present the capacity to acclimate to sub-ambient CO_2 conditions.

5.6 References

- Allen, N., Nordlander, M., Mcgonigle, T., Basinger, J., Kaminskyj, S., 2006. Arbuscular mycorrhizae on Axel Heiberg Island (80°N) and at Saskatoon (52°N) Canada. *Can. J. Bot.* 84, 1094–1100
- Alt, D.S., Doyle, J.W., Malladi, A., 2017. Nitrogen-source preference in blueberry (*Vaccinium sp.*): Enhanced shoot nitrogen assimilation in response to direct supply of nitrate. *J. Plant Physiol.* 216, 79–87. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jplph.2017.05.014>
- Amundson, R., Austin, A.T., Schuur, E.A.G., Yoo, K., Matzek, V., Kendall, C., Uebersax, A., Brenner, D., Baisden, W.T., 2003. Global patterns of the isotopic composition of soil and plant nitrogen. *Global Biogeochem. Cycles* 17. <https://doi.org/10.1029/2002GB001903>
- Anderson, L.J., Maherali, H., Johnson, H.B., Polley, H.W., Jackson, R.B., 2001. Gas exchange and photosynthetic acclimation over subambient to elevated CO₂ in a C₃-C₄ grassland. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 693–707. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1354-1013.2001.00438.x>
- Becklin, K.M., Walker, S.M., Way, D.A., Ward, J.K., 2017. CO₂ studies remain key to understanding a future world. *New Phytol.* 214, 34–40. <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.14336>
- Beerling, D.J., Jolley, D.W., 1998. Fossil plants record an atmospheric ¹²CO₂ and temperature spike across the Paleocene-Eocene transition in NW Europe. *J. Geol. Soc. London.* 155, 591–594.
- Björkman, E., 1970. Forest tree mycorrhiza — The conditions for its formation and the significance for tree growth and afforestation. *Plant Soil* 32, 589–610. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01372897>
- Bloom, A.J., Burger, M., Asensio, J.S.R., Cousins, A.B., Zhou, L., Shew, H.D., Rufty, T.W., Hu, S., 2010. Carbon dioxide enrichment inhibits nitrate assimilation in wheat and *Arabidopsis*. *Science.* 328, 899–903. <https://doi.org/10.1126/science.1186440>
- Bloom, A.J., Burger, M., Kimball, B.A., Pinter, Jr, P.J., 2014. Nitrate assimilation is inhibited by elevated CO₂ in field-grown wheat. *Nat. Clim. Chang.* 4, 477–480. <https://doi.org/10.1038/nclimate2183>
- Bolan, N.S., 1991. A critical review on the role of mycorrhizal fungi in the uptake of phosphorus by plants. *Plant Soil* 134, 189–207
- Bomfleur, B., Decombeix, A.-L., Escapa, I.H., Schwendemann, A.B., Axsmith, B., 2013. Whole-Plant Concept and Environment Reconstruction of a *Telemachus* Conifer (Voltziales) from the Triassic of Antarctica. *Int. J. Plant Sci.* 174, 425–444. <https://doi.org/10.1086/668686>

- Breuninger, M., Trujillo, C.G., Serrano, E., Fischer, R., Requena, N., 2004. Different nitrogen sources modulate activity but not expression of glutamine synthetase in arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi. *Fungal Genet. Biol.* 41, 542–552. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.FGB.2004.01.003>
- Brundrett, M.C., 2009. Mycorrhizal associations and other means of nutrition of vascular plants: Understanding the global diversity of host plants by resolving conflicting information and developing reliable means of diagnosis. *Plant Soil* 320, 37–77. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11104-008-9877-9>
- Brundrett, M.C., 2002. Coevolution of roots and mycorrhizas of land plants. *New Phytol.* 154, 275–304. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1469-8137.2002.00397.x>
- Busch, F.A., Sage, R.F., Farquhar, G.D., 2018. Plants increase CO₂ uptake by assimilating nitrogen via the photorespiratory pathway. *Nat. Plants* 4, 46–54. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41477-017-0065-x>
- Chambers, C.A., Smith, S.E., Smith, F.A., 1980. Effects of ammonium and nitrate ions on mycorrhizal infection, nodulation and growth of *Trifolium subterraneum*. *New Phytol.* 85, 47–62
- Cowling, S.A., Sage, R.F., 1998. Interactive effects of low atmospheric CO₂ and elevated temperature on growth, photosynthesis and respiration in *Phaseolus vulgaris*. *Plant, Cell Environ.* 21, 427–435. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-3040.1998.00290.x>
- Cunniff, J., Jones, G., Charles, M., Osborne, C.P., 2017. Yield responses of wild C₃ and C₄ crop progenitors to subambient CO₂: A test for the role of CO₂ limitation in the origin of agriculture. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 23, 380–393. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13473>
- Currie, A.F., Murray, P.J., Gange, A.C., 2011. Is a specialist root-feeding insect affected by arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi? *Appl. Soil Ecol.* 47, 77–83. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.APSOIL.2010.12.002>
- Dalling, J.W., Cernusak, L.A., Winter, K., Aranda, J., Garcia, M., Virgo, A., Cheesman, A.W., Baresch, A., Jaramillo, C., Turner, B.L., 2016. Two tropical conifers show strong growth and water-use efficiency responses to altered CO₂ concentration. *Ann. Bot. mcw162*. <https://doi.org/10.1093/aob/mcw162>
- Dier, M., Meinen, R., Erbs, M., Kollhorst, L., Baillie, C.-K., Kaufholdt, D., Kücke, M., Weigel, H.-J., Zörb, C., Hänsch, R., Manderscheid, R., 2017. Effects of Free Air Carbon Dioxide Enrichment (FACE) on nitrogen assimilation and growth of winter wheat under nitrate and ammonium fertilization. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 24, e40–e54. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.13819>
- Drucker, D., Bocherens, H., Bridault, A., Billiou, D., 2003. Carbon and nitrogen isotopic composition of red deer (*Cervus elaphus*) collagen as a tool for tracking palaeoenvironmental change during the Late-Glacial and Early Holocene in the

- northern Jura (France). *Palaeogeogr. Palaeoclimatol. Palaeoecol.* 195, 375–388. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0031-0182\(03\)00366-3](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0031-0182(03)00366-3)
- Ehleringer, J.R., Cerling, T.E., Dearing, M.D., 2005. *A History of atmospheric CO₂ and its effects on plants, animals, and ecosystems*, 1st ed. Springer, Salt Lake City, UT, USA
- Fogel, R., 1988. Interactions among soil biota in coniferous ecosystems. *Agric. Ecosyst. Environ.* 24, 69–85. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8809\(88\)90057-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8809(88)90057-6)
- Gange, A.C., Bower, E., Brown, V.K., 1999. Positive effects of an arbuscular mycorrhizal fungus on aphid life history traits. *Oecologia* 120, 123–131. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004420050840>
- Gerhart, L.M., Ward, J.K., 2010. Plant responses to low [CO₂] of the past. *New Phytol.* 188, 674–695. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2010.03441.x>
- Krings, M., Taylor, T.N., Dotzler, N., 2013. Fossil evidence of the zygomycetous fungi. *Persoonia* 30, 1–10. <https://doi.org/10.3767/003158513X664819>
- Loreto, F., Fischbach, R.J., Schnitzler, J.-P., Ciccioli, P., Brancaleoni, E., Calfapietra, C., Seufert, G., 2001. Monoterpene emission and monoterpene synthase activities in the Mediterranean evergreen oak *Quercus ilex* L. grown at elevated CO₂ concentrations. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 7, 709–717. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1354-1013.2001.00442.x>
- Maherali, H., Oberle, B., Stevens, P.F., Cornwell, W.K., Mcglinn, D.J., 2016. Mutualism persistence and abandonment during the evolution of the mycorrhizal symbiosis. *Am. Nat.* 188, E113–E125. <https://doi.org/10.5061/dryad.n8bm9>
- Metcalfe, J.Z., Longstaffe, F.J., Hodgins, G., 2013. Proboscideans and paleoenvironments of the Pleistocene Great Lakes: Landscape, vegetation, and stable isotopes. *Quat. Sci. Rev.* 76, 102–113. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.quascirev.2013.07.004>
- Minagawa, M., Wada, E., 1984. Stepwise enrichment of ¹⁵N along food chains: Further evidence and the relation between $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ and animal age. *Geochim. Cosmochim. Acta* 48, 1135–1140. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037\(84\)90204-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/0016-7037(84)90204-7)
- Öpik, M., Moora, M., Liira, J., Zobel, M., 2006. Composition of root-colonizing arbuscular mycorrhizal fungal communities in different ecosystems around the globe. *J. Ecol.* 94, 778–790. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2745.2006.01136.x>
- Öpik, M., Moora, M., Zobel, M., Saks, I., Wheatley, R., Wright, F., Daniell, T., 2008. High diversity of arbuscular mycorrhizal fungi in a boreal herb-rich coniferous forest. *New Phytol.* 179, 867–876. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469-8137.2008.02515.x>
- Peñuelas, J., Estiarte, M., LLusia, J., 1997. Carbon-based secondary compounds at

elevated CO₂. *Photosynthetica* 33, 313–316

- Petit, R.J., Raynaud, D., Basile, I., Chappellaz, J., Ritz, C., Delmotte, M., Legrand, M., Lorius, C., Pe, L., 1999. Climate and atmospheric history of the past 420,000 years from the Vostok ice core, Antarctica. *Nature* 399, 429–413. <https://doi.org/10.1038/20859>
- Post, D.M., 2002. Using stable isotopes to estimate trophic position: Models, methods, and assumptions. *Ecology* 83, 703–718. [https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658\(2002\)083\[0703:USITET\]2.0.CO;2](https://doi.org/10.1890/0012-9658(2002)083[0703:USITET]2.0.CO;2)
- Raimanová, I., Haberle, J., 2010. The effects of differentiated water supply after anthesis and nitrogen fertilization on $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of wheat grain. *Rapid Commun. Mass Spectrom.* 24, 3567–3577. <https://doi.org/10.1002/rcm>
- Ripley, B.S., Cunniff, J., Osborne, C.P., 2013. Photosynthetic acclimation and resource use by the *C*₃ and *C*₄ subspecies of *Alloteropsis semialata* in low CO₂ atmospheres. *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 19, 900–910. <https://doi.org/10.1111/gcb.12091>
- Sage, R.F., 1995. Was low atmospheric CO₂ during the Pleistocene a limiting factor for the origin of agriculture? *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 1, 93–106. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1365-2486.1995.tb00009.x>
- Sage, R.F., Coleman, J.R., 2001. Effects of low atmospheric CO₂ on plants: More than a thing of the past. *Trends Plant Sci.* 6, 18–24. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385\(00\)01813-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S1360-1385(00)01813-6)
- Sage, R.F., Cowling, S.A., 1999. Implications of stress in low CO₂ atmospheres of the past: Are today's plants too conservative for a high CO₂ world?, in: Luo, Y., Mooney, H.A. (Eds.), *Carbon Dioxide and Environmental Stress*. Academic Press, San Diego, CA, USA, pp. 289–304
- Schwartz-Narbonne, R., Longstaffe, F.J., Metcalfe, J.Z., Zazula, G., 2015. Solving the woolly mammoth conundrum: amino acid $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ -enrichment suggests a distinct forage or habitat. *Sci. Rep.* 5, 9791. <https://doi.org/10.1038/srep09791>
- Schwendemann, A.B., Decombeix, A., Taylor, T.N., Taylor, E.L., Krings, M., 2011. Morphological and functional stasis in mycorrhizal root nodules as exhibited by a Triassic conifer. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci.* 108, 13630–13634. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.97.8.4086>
- Serret, M.D., Yousfi, S., Vicente, R., Piñero, M.C., Otálora-Alcón, G., del Amor, F.M., Araus, J.L., 2018. Interactive effects of CO₂ concentration and water regime on stable isotope signatures, nitrogen assimilation and growth in sweet pepper. *Front. Plant Sci.* 8, 2180. <https://doi.org/10.3389/fpls.2017.02180>
- Stockey, R.A., Rothwell, G.W., Addy, H.D., Currah, R.S., 2001. Mycorrhizal association of the extinct conifer *Metasequoia milleri*. *Mycology* 105, 202–205.

<https://doi.org/10.1017/S0953756200003221>

- Strullu-Derrien, C., Selosse, M.-A., Kenrick, P., Martin, F.M., 2018. The origin and evolution of mycorrhizal symbioses: from palaeomycology to phylogenomics. *New Phytol.* <https://doi.org/10.1111/nph.15076>
- Strullu-Derrien, C., Strullu, D.-G., 2007. Mycorrhization of fossil and living plants. *Comptes Rendus Palevol* 6, 483–494. <https://doi.org/10.1016/J.CRPV.2007.09.006>
- Szpak, P., Gröcke, D.R., Debruyne, R., MacPhee, R.D.E., Guthrie, R.D., Froese, D., Zazula, G.D., Patterson, W.P., Poinar, H.N., 2010. Regional differences in bone collagen $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ of Pleistocene mammoths: Implications for paleoecology of the mammoth steppe. *Palaeogeogr. Palaeoclimatol. Palaeoecol.* 286, 88–96. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.palaeo.2009.12.009>
- Taylor, T.N., Krings, M., Taylor, E.L., 2015. Fungal diversity in the fossil record, in: *Systematics and Evolution*. Springer Berlin Heidelberg, Berlin, Heidelberg, pp. 259–278. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-662-46011-5_10
- Temme, A.A., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2013. Meta-analysis reveals profound responses of plant traits to glacial CO_2 levels. *Ecol. Evol.* 3, 4525–4535. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.836>
- Temme, A.A., Liu, J.C., Cornwell, W.K., Cornelissen, J.H.C., Aerts, R., 2015. Winners always win: Growth of a wide range of plant species from low to future high CO_2 . *Ecol. Evol.* 5, 4949–4961. <https://doi.org/10.1002/ece3.1687>
- Tissue, D., Griffin, K., Thomas, R., Strain, B., 1995. Effects of low and elevated CO_2 on C_3 and C_4 annuals -II. Photosynthesis and leaf biochemistry. *Oecologia* 101, 21–28.
- Wang, B., Qiu, Y.L., 2006. Phylogenetic distribution and evolution of mycorrhizas in land plants. *Mycorrhiza* 16, 299–363. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00572-005-0033-6>
- Ward, J.K., Tissue, D.T., Thomas, R.B., Strain, B.R., 1999. Comparative responses of model C_3 and C_4 plants to drought in low and elevated CO_2 . *Glob. Chang. Biol.* 5, 857–867. <https://doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-2486.1999.00270.x>
- Weil, R.R., Brady, N.C., 2016. *The nature and properties of soils*, 15th ed. Pearson
- Williams, R.S., Lincoln, D.E., Thomas, R.B., 1994. Loblolly pine grown under elevated CO_2 affects early instar pine sawfly performance. *Oecologia* 98, 64–71
- Yashina, S., Gubin, S., Maksimovich, S., Yashina, A., Gakhova, E., Gilichinsky, D., 2012. Regeneration of whole fertile plants from 30,000-y-old fruit tissue buried in Siberian permafrost. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. U. S. A.* 109, 4008–13. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1118386109>

Yousfi, S., Serret, M.D., Márquez, A.J., Voltas, J., Araus, J.L., 2012. Combined use of $\delta^{13}\text{C}$, $\delta^{18}\text{O}$ and $\delta^{15}\text{N}$ tracks nitrogen metabolism and genotypic adaptation of durum wheat to salinity and water deficit. *New Phytol.* 194, 230–244. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1469->

Appendices

Appendix A. Modified Hoagland's recipe for each fertilization regime. **A.** full-strength $\text{NO}_3^-/\text{NH}_4^+$ mix fertilizer (*full*); **B.** full-strength, NO_3^- -only fertilizer (*nitrate*); **C.** a full-strength NH_4^+ -only fertilizer (*ammonium*); **D.** half-strength $\text{NO}_3^-/\text{NH}_4^+$ mix fertilizer (*half*). The concentration of the stock solution of each compound (mol), based on its molecular weight (g/mol), was calculated for one liter of water (g/L) and adjusted in order to achieve the desired concentration of each element (mol/L).

A.

<i>full</i>	Mol. Weight (g/mol)	Stock solution (mol)	Stock solution (g/L)	Final stock solution (mL)	Element (mol/L)														
					N	K	Ca	P	S	Mg	Na	Cl	B	Mn	Zn	Cu	Mo	Co	Fe
NH ₄ H ₂ PO ₄	115.08	1	115.08	1	0.12			0.26											
NH ₄ Cl	53.49	1	53.49	2.95	0.77							1.93							
KCl	74	1	74	3		1.58						1.42							
Ca(NO ₃) ₂ · 4(H ₂ O)	236.16	1	236.16	2	0.12		0.34												
MgSO ₄	246.49	1	246.49	0.5					0.06	0.05									
CoCl ₂	237.95	0.001	0.24	0.5								0.07						0.12	
H ₂ BO ₃	61.84	0.025	1.55	0.5									0.08						
MnSO ₄	169.01	0.002	0.34	0.5					0.09					0.16					
ZnSO ₄	287.55	0.002	0.58	0.5					0.05						0.11				
CuSO ₄	249.71	0.0005	0.12	0.5					0.06							0.13			
MoN ₂ O ₄	241.95	0.0005	0.12	0.5	0.029												0.20		
Fe - EDTA	346.08	0.02	6.92	0.5															0.08
NaH ₂ PO ₄	138	0.005	0.69	1			0.22			0.16									
<u>Final concentration of the element (mol/L)</u>					1.04	1.58	0.34	0.48	0.28	0.05	0.16	3.42	0.08	0.16	0.11	0.13	0.20	0.12	0.08

B.

<i>nitrate</i>	Mol. Weight (g/mol)	Stock solution (mol)	Stock solution (g/L)	Final stock solution (mL)	Element (mol/L)														
					N	K	Ca	P	S	Mg	Na	Cl	B	Mn	Zn	Cu	Mo	Co	Fe
KNO ₃	101.1	1	101.10	2.9	0.40	1.12													
NaNO ₃	84.99	1	84.99	3	0.49														
KH ₂ PO ₄	136.09	1	136.09	1.6		0.46		0.35											
Ca(NO ₃) ₂ · 4(H ₂ O)	236.16	1	236.16	2	0.12		0.34												
MgSO ₄ · 7(H ₂ O)	246.49	1	246.49	0.5					0.06	0.05									
NaH ₂ PO ₄	138	0.005	0.69	0.5				0.11			0.08								
CoCl ₂ · 6(H ₂ O)	237.95	0.001	0.24	0.5								0.07						0.12	
H ₂ BO ₃	61.84	0.025	1.55	0.5									0.08						
MnSO ₄ · (H ₂ O)	169.01	0.002	0.34	0.5					0.09					0.16					
ZnSO ₄ · 7(H ₂ O)	287.55	0.002	0.58	0.5					0.06						0.11				
CuSO ₄ · 5(H ₂ O)	249.71	0.0005	0.12	0.5					0.06							0.13			
MoN ₂ O ₄ · 2(H ₂ O)	241.95	0.0005	0.12	0.5	0.03												0.20		
Fe - EDTA	346.08	0.02	6.92	0.5															0.08
<u>Final concentration of the element (mol/L)</u>					1.04	1.58	0.34	0.46	0.28	0.05	0.08	0.07	0.08	0.16	0.11	0.13	0.20	0.12	0.08

C.

<i>ammonium</i>	Mol. Weight (g/mol)	Stock solution (mol)	Stock solution (g/L)	Final stock solution (mL)	Element (mol/L)														
					N	K	Ca	P	S	Mg	Na	Cl	B	Mn	Zn	Cu	Mo	Co	Fe
NH ₄ H ₂ PO ₄	115.08	1	115.08	1.4	0.17			0.36											
NH ₄ Cl	53.49	1	53.49	3.2	0.84							2.09							
KCl	74	1	74	3		1.58						1.42							
CaCl ₂	110.98	1	110.98	0.95			0.34					0.30							
MgSO ₄	246.49	1	246.49	0.5					0.06	0.05									
NaH ₂ PO ₄	138	0.005	0.69	0.5				0.11			0.08								
CoCl ₂	237.95	0.001	0.23795	0.5								0.07						0.12	
H ₂ BO ₃	61.84	0.025	1.546	0.5									0.08						
MnSO ₄	169.01	0.002	0.33802	0.5					0.09					0.16					
ZnSO ₄	287.55	0.002	0.5751	0.5					0.06						0.11				
CuSO ₄	249.71	0.0005	0.124855	0.5					0.06							0.13			
MoN ₂ O ₄	241.95	0.0005	0.120975	0.5	0.03												0.20		
Fe - EDTA	346.08	0.02	6.9216	0.5															0.08
<u>Final concentration of the element (mol/L)</u>					1.04	1.58	0.34	0.47	0.28	0.05	0.08	3.89	0.08	0.16	0.11	0.13	0.20	0.12	0.08

D.

<i>half</i>	Mol. Weight (g/mol)	Stock solution (mol)	Stock solution (g/L)	Final stock solution (mL)	Element (mol/L)															
					N	K	Ca	P	S	Mg	Na	Cl	B	Mn	Zn	Cu	Mo	Co	Fe	
NH ₄ H ₂ PO ₄	115.08	1	115.08	1	0.12			0.26												
NH ₄ Cl	53.49	1	53.49	0.9	0.18							0.59								
KNO ₃	101.1	1	101.10	1	0.19	0.54														
KCl	74	2.3	74	1		1.03						1.09								
CaCl ₂	110.98	1	110.98	0.95			0.34					0.30								
MgSO ₄	246.49	1	246.49	0.5					0.06	0.05										
CoCl ₂	237.95	0.001	0.24	0.5								0.07							0.12	
H ₂ BO ₃	61.84	0.025	1.55	0.5									0.08							
MnSO ₄	169.01	0.002	0.34	0.5					0.09					0.16						
ZnSO ₄	287.55	0.002	0.58	0.5					0.06						0.11					
CuSO ₄	249.71	0.0005	0.12	0.5					0.06							0.13				
MoN ₂ O ₄	241.95	0.0005	0.12	0.5	0.03												0.20			
Fe - EDTA	346.08	0.02	6.92	0.5																0.08
NaH ₂ PO ₄	138	0.005	0.69	1				0.22			0.16									
<u>Final concentration of the element (mol/L)</u>					0.53	1.57	0.34	0.48	0.28	0.05	0.16	2	0.08	0.16	0.11	0.13	0.20	0.12	0.08	

Appendix B. Carbon isotope composition of leaves ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$) and roots ($\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$) in each inoculation and growth CO_2 treatment, adjusted to a common value (-8.4‰) for atmospheric CO_2 in the growth chambers. Means \pm SE, n = 12.

		$\delta^{13}\text{C}$ (‰, VPDB)					
Inoculation	CO_2 (ppm)	<i>Measured</i> $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$	<i>Measured</i> $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$	<i>Measured</i> CO_2 $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{chamber}}$	<i>Correction</i> to -8.4‰	<i>Adjusted</i> $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{leaf}}$	<i>Adjusted</i> $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{root}}$
control	180	-34.91 ± 0.33	-33.01 ± 0.22	-8.72 ± 0.39	0.32 ± 0.01	-34.59 ± 0.33	-32.69 ± 0.22
	270	-31.91 ± 0.34	-30.84 ± 0.30	-7.80 ± 0.41	-0.60 ± 0.01	-32.51 ± 0.34	-31.44 ± 0.30
	400	-36.37 ± 0.14	-35.03 ± 0.17	-11.23 ± 0.13	2.83 ± 0.01	-33.54 ± 0.14	-32.20 ± 0.17
mycorrhizae	180	-35.93 ± 0.29	-33.96 ± 0.33	-8.72 ± 0.39	0.32 ± 0.01	-35.61 ± 0.29	-33.64 ± 0.33
	270	-35.30 ± 0.32	-33.36 ± 0.35	-7.80 ± 0.41	-0.60 ± 0.01	-35.90 ± 0.32	-33.96 ± 0.35
	400	-37.57 ± 0.24	-36.25 ± 0.36	-11.23 ± 0.13	2.83 ± 0.01	-34.74 ± 0.24	-33.42 ± 0.36

6 CV

André Galvao Duarte

Education

2015 – present: **Ph.D. in plant ecophysiology and climate change** (expected August 2019), University of Western Ontario, Department of Biology, London, ON, Canada.

2013 – 2015: **M.Sc. in Environmental Sciences**, Albert-Ludwigs-Universität Freiburg, Freiburg im Breisgau, Germany.

2003 – 2006: **B.Sc./Teaching degree in Biology**, Universidade do Estado de Minas Gerais, Passos, Brazil.

Publications

Duarte, A. G.; Katata, G., Hoshika, Y.; Hossain, M.; Kreuzwieser, J.; Arneth, A.; Ruehr, N. K. (2016). Immediate and potential long-term effects of consecutive heat waves on the photosynthetic performance and water balance in Douglas-fir. *Journal of Plant Physiology*, 205, 57-66.

Dusenge, M. E.*; **Duarte, A. G.***; Way, D. A. (2018). Plant carbon metabolism and climate change: elevated CO₂ and temperature impacts on photosynthesis, photorespiration and respiration. *New Phytologist*, 221, 32-49. (* authors contributed equally to the work)

In revision

Duarte, A. G.; Longstaffe, F. J.; Way, D. A. Nitrogen source and availability influence low CO₂ effects on plant performance. *Functional Plant Biology*.

In prep

Duarte, A. G.; Longstaffe, F. J.; Way, D. A. The balance between plant growth and defense compound production at low CO₂ concentrations of the past.

Duarte, A. G.; Longstaffe, F. J.; Way, D. A. Plant-mycorrhizal interaction at past low CO₂ concentrations: effects on growth and C and N isotope signature.

Book chapter in review

Duarte, A. G.; Dusenge, M. E.; McDonald, S.; Bennett, K.; Lemon, K.; Radford, J.; Way, D. A. Photosynthetic acclimation to temperature and CO₂: the role of leaf N. *Springer*.

Work experience

2015 – present: **Graduate Teaching Assistant**, University of Western Ontario, London, Canada. Lab instructor for the courses Biology for Sciences I and II, Plant as human resources, and Plant ecophysiology.

Aug. – Nov. 2014: **Research Assistant**, Institute of Meteorology and Climate Research, Karlsruhe Institute of Technology, Garmisch-Partenkirchen, Germany. Measurements and data analysis in a greenhouse experiment on the effects of elevated temperature on plant growth.

May 2014: **Student Assistant**, Faculty of Environment and Natural Resources, Albert-Ludwigs-Universität Freiburg, Germany. Translation and organization of documents related to projects of biodiversity conservation in the Amazonian floodplains.

Jul. 2007 – Aug. 2013: **Services Manager**, Banco do Brazil, Brazil. Coordination of customer service, inventory, hiring of service providers.

Conferences

André G. Duarte, Fred J. Longstaffe, Danielle A. Way (2019). Do I grow or do I fight: Plant growth and defense compound production at past low [CO₂]. Gordon Research Conference – CO₂ Assimilation in Plants: from Genome to Biome, Newry, ME, USA.

André G. Duarte, Fred J. Longstaffe, Danielle A. Way (2018). Nitrogen source and availability alter the effect of low CO₂ on growth, photosynthesis, and N dynamics. Plant Biology: Joint meeting of the Canadian Society of Plant Biologists & the American Society of Plant Biologists, Montreal, QC.

André G. Duarte, Fred J. Longstaffe, Danielle A. Way (2018). Do I grow or do I fight: Plant growth and defense compound production at past low [CO₂]. Canadian Society of Plant Biologists, Easter Regional Meeting, London, ON.

André G. Duarte, Fred J Longstaffe, Danielle A Way. (2017) Nitrogen source and availability alter the effect of low CO₂ on growth, photosynthesis, and N dynamics. Fallona Interdisciplinary Showcase, London, ON.

André G. Duarte, Fred J. Longstaffe, Danielle A. Way (2017). Nitrogen source and availability alter the effect of low CO₂ on growth, photosynthesis, and N dynamics. Canadian Society of Plant Biologists and the Canadian Society for Horticultural Science, Annual Meeting, Vancouver, BC.

André G. Duarte, Fred J. Longstaffe, Danielle A. Way (2016). Nitrogen source and availability alter the effect of low CO₂ on growth, photosynthesis, and N dynamics. Canadian Society of Plant Biologists, Easter Regional Meeting, Burlington, ON.

Nadine Ruehr, **André G. Duarte**, Almut Arneth (2016). Beyond the extreme: Recovery dynamics following heat and drought stress in trees. AGU Fall Meeting. San Francisco, USA.

André G. Duarte; Katata, Genki; Ruehr, Nadine (2015). Effects of heat waves on photosynthetic performance in Douglas-fir (*Pseudotsuga mensinensis*). Canadian Society of Plant Biologists, Easter Regional Meeting, Toronto, ON.

Scholarships and awards

PhD Scholarship – Science without borders, Conselho Nacional de Desenvolvimento e Pesquisa, \$90.000, 00

Poster Award, Fallona Interdisciplinary Research Showcase, \$2,500.00

Travel Award, Western University – Biology Department, \$400.00

Georg H. Duff Travel Bursary, Canadian Society of Plant Biologists, \$75.00

Service and outreach

Councilor in the Environmental and Ecological Planning Advisory Committee of the city of London, 2019

Representative of the Faculty of Science in the Graduate Education Council of the School of Graduate and Post-Doctoral Studies at Western University, 2016 – 2018

Chairperson of the Society of Biology Graduate Students, Western University, 2016 – 2017

Member of the Fundraising committee of the Biology Graduate Research Forum 2016 at Western University